Sacred Rebellion

Evangelicals’ corrupting influence in
Spirituality – Society – Culture – Politics – Economics

With a view on how the Columbine Massacre was an evangelical disaster in the making.
My next book to be released: *Evangelical Decadence*

Theme: How mistaken theologies among us create an evangelical idol god that yields spiritual apathy, immorality, and false security; and how this also contributes to our godless youth.

Copyright © 2012 by Jearell C. Kelley

PO, Box 63901
Colorado Springs, CO 80962

Scripture quotations marked KJV are taken from the King James Version of the Bible. (Public Domain.)

Scripture quotations marked (NIV) are taken from the Holy Bible, New International Version®, NIV®. Copyright © 1973, 1978, 1984 by Biblica, Inc™. Used by permission of Zondervan. All rights reserved worldwide.

Dedication

This work is dedicated to all families who lost a child in a violent senseless crime. There are many Christians who believe in a divine blueprint plan such that all things that happened are of God’s design. This author, while a Christian, does not believe this. We live in a fallen world that is in rebellion against God and God’s agenda. The crimes against these unfortunate families could happen to anyone. I pray this work does not cause pain to them who have suffered so much already. Instead, this work is dedicated to the task that their children will not have died in vain. However, the fact remains that we are all guilty in God’s sight and are thus venerable of hurting each other either directly or indirectly by our ignorance and apathies.

Jearell C. Kelley
September 26, 2010
“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’”

Hosea 4:6 (NIV)
715-710 B.C.

“The same was true in education and the fine arts. Now, however, these fields of study and practice have been taken over by humanists, and the great tragedy is that Christians, by their indifference, have acquiesced in this Satanic takeover.”

Dr. Henry M. Morris
The Remarkable Record of Job, page 100
# Table of Contents

Dedication .................................................................................. 3  
Preface ..................................................................................... 6  
Acknowledgments ...................................................................... 7  

Chapter 1: Introduction to VOID ................................................. 9  
Chapter 2: The Class of the Secret Agenda .................................. 28  
Chapter 3: Political Pressures, Prophets, and Public Spirituality .... 58  
Chapter 4: Profound Secondary Effects of Humanistic Education  
  and the Cry of God’s Heart ....................................................... 88  
Chapter 5: Values in Vacuum in Vain ......................................... 103  
Chapter 6: Evangelical Mistakes ............................................... 133  
Chapter 7: Misleading Sound Bite Theologies ........................... 159  
Chapter 8: Easy Evangelicalism and Their Coming Judgment ...... 175  
Chapter 9: Our Future Society ................................................ 206  
Chapter 10: Options and Strategies ......................................... 224  

Appendix  
A) School Violence .................................................................... 241  
B) Public School Sex Abuse ..................................................... 248  
C) The Columbine God Question –  
  Why It’s Debated and the Ramifications .................................. 248  
D) Loss of Christian Liberties .................................................... 256  

References .................................................................................. 261
Preface

Does it matter if evangelical children reject the faith, the culture is unashamedly decadent, and public policy is anti-Christian? These are the signs of our times and a common cause for all this exists that many evangelicals ignore. I accepted Christ in the second grade but could have been an atheist in the sixth. My parents never knew. The Church is still apathetic to the state’s promotion of secular religion. What held me in the traditional faith was God’s grace through a different source. It was not the institutional Church.

Readers should be warned. If they take pride in our past efforts of protest against humanistic influences in public schools, or focus on the godless decisions of liberal judges, or specialize alone in the nurturing ministries to the poor and social outcasts, they are likely to blame others for social decadence. The purpose of this book is to point evangelicals back to the many prophetic voices and wise men they are ignoring—voices (authors) that clearly show how we, with God’s help, could be much more effective in reaching our world for Christ, as well as a preserving element in society. Yes! A significant single strategy exists to reverse our society’s decadence! Evangelical apathy exists today for multiple reasons. In fact, Jesus gave multiple reasons why the ungodly could be more effective than the godly.

“For the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.”
Luke 16:8b KJV

“...the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he cometh unfruitful.”
Matthew 13:22 KJV

“Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them ye shall kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city;”
Matthew 23:34 KJV

We do not kill prophets and wise men today. We kill their message. We simply do not read their books. This too explains why the children of this world are wiser than the children of light. We are either too busy, believe other organizations are meeting the need, or focused on the nurturing ministries alone. We are creatures of traditions and habits and thus mistakenly believe we are fully pleasing God. This is our sacred rebellion. The result is as Hosea was inspired to write many years ago…by ignorance of God’s knowledge our children suffer (My paraphrase of Hosea 4:6).

Life can be very busy and demanding. Yet, our spirituality is reflected in our priorities. This book is an attempt to condense these god-sent, forgotten, and ignored voices, many of which are evangelical, into one book. God has already provided solutions if we could listen, learn, and obey. Abortion, marriage, economics, liberal courts, and other issues evangelicals deeply care about could be positively affected for Christ by focusing on one main issue. In other words, our children’s future could be significantly better. How can this be if we are living in the last days? Answering this question involves a willingness to honestly evaluate our spirituality. We are living in the last days accelerated and our apathies have been the catalyst to this acceleration. When the Church becomes non-responsive to society, the affect is the same as a society without the Church after Christ takes His bride home.
Acknowledgments

For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.
Apostle Paul - Romans 14:7 (KJV)

Today we would say… No man is an island to himself. For a moment this seems like a contradiction for those that have buried themselves with books, newspaper clippings, magazine articles, notes, and research from others. Even for these isolated individuals, there comes a time to emerge from their cocoon and begin to share what was learned. When this happens the learning for the new butterfly does not stop. There is the whole world of personal responses to the new ideas to explore.

This is also true for any new author, and it happens through the sharing and evaluation of ideas. For this, I am indebted to those who have provided their thoughtful feedback and valuable assistance. Adrienne Martin and Tammie Kuhn are professional proofreaders. Their attention to detail and critical evaluation was greatly appreciated. Any errors that remain are due to the fact, the target kept moving and they were not privileged to shoot at the final version. Renee Gray-Wilburn was another critical evaluator. I’m pleased she forced me to rethink my approach on a few points. I’m not confident I met her goal.

I’m most thankful Erin Shepard was able and available to apply her artistic skills in displaying this book’s primary theme in its cover design.

Dr. Mark Hartwig was another example of selfless giving while he struggled with serious health issues. I am thankful for his friendship, advice, and encouragement.

I am also indebted to those willing to share resources: Cindy Caruso of NavPress for granting permission to borrow a major quote from J.P. Moreland’s book, Love Your God With All Your Mind.

Chuck Asay’s Media Scrutiny, Wayne Stayskal’s public school detectors for guns, knives, and religious materials, along with Michael Ramirez’s Forum on School Violence plus other illustrations describe segments of our society succinctly. Each is a picture worth a thousand words. I am grateful to them as supporting references of social events that others fail to see in real life. Their artistic gifts will be rewarded.

Thanks to Basic Books to quote extensively from James Davison Hunter’s The Death of Character – Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil.


It should be carefully noted that no implied concurrence to this thesis should be assumed to be associated with any individual or organization listed above.
Lastly, I’m thankful for an understanding wife and family. Their willingness to share me with the passion that drove me should be rewarded. Hopefully, for their sacrifice, Christians everywhere will take advantage of opportunities that have always existed but are commonly ignored. These significant opportunities could cause many to be much more receptive of accepting Jesus the Christ as the incarnate resurrected Son of the living God, if only evangelicals could wake up from their carnality, repent, and put into action the cry of God’s heart.
Chapter 1: Introduction to VOID

Bill and Irene (names changed) would make any Christian pastor happy. They faithfully attend church, are authentically friendly and relational, eager to volunteer for community outreach efforts, and willingly give to support the ministry. They believe preaching the gospel of Jesus Christ is primary and engage in personal witnessing as they find opportunity. By definition and their lifestyles, Bill and Irene are outstanding Christian evangelicals.

From time to time, Bill and Irene even tactfully and lovingly promote pro-life causes and pro-family candidates. Despite all their praiseworthy and self-sacrificing efforts, Bill and Irene have unintentionally promoted more social decadence than they perceive. They are no different than most evangelicals. Even with nurturing and non-confrontational efforts, evangelicals have been saltless and clueless in the most fundamental and important spiritual areas of our society. This collective failure exists despite the fact that many evangelicals desire to please God. Many simply do not know what is lacking in their spirituality nor do they discern the primary issue of our time.

Bill and Irene have never heard a sermon or Sunday school lesson explaining how they are part of the problem. Past and present conditions suggest they never will. Consequently, evangelicals are ineffective in their own neighborhoods and communities. (Chapters 2 and 6 will explain why.) And, consequently, America is long overdue for another Great Awakening. What a shock it will be for many evangelical pastors and leaders when they hear Christ’s past rebuke of Saint Peter redirected to them on their day of judgment: You are an offense to me because you do not have the things of God on your mind! (Author’s paraphrase of Matthew 16:23).

Social decadence has escalated in our time. It makes up much of our daily news. But what is social decadence? It is mothers who have killed their children, professional businessmen who have stolen investments from others, and senseless acts of cruel violence. These are repeated stories. Unwed mothers, abandoned and abused children, and homeless people are everywhere. Same-sex relationships and cohabitation that once were shameful are now openly admitted without embarrassment. Even divorce and remarriage among “Christians” is not significantly different from the national average—26 percent evangelicals vs. 33 percent general US population. More states now permit assisted suicide than ever before. Abortion, youth violence, gangs, and illegal drugs are serious issues now. Drive-by shootings of strangers killing strangers without purpose are new for this generation. Unfortunately, these are not the only forms of social decadence. Social decadence also includes the loss of Christian liberties via judicial tyranny and godless public policies politically driven by powerful special interest. Here, the average evangelical also fails to discern how they indirectly promoted such decadence.

Bill and Irene know that a progression of increasing decadence abounds in our very secular society but are totally ignorant of how they are catalytic agents to it all. This failure is very much connected to Bill and Irene’s ignorance of secularism, its origin, and
propagation. (Chapters 2, 4, and 6 give more ministry options to abate these problems than Bill and Irene presently perceive.)

A look back into America’s history will show that, while no golden Christian age existed in America, our Founding Fathers had a profound Christian influence on America’s beginnings that has left a positive legacy for almost two hundred years.[A] This was especially evident in the Northwest Ordinance, Article III: “Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged.”[2] That religion was the Christian religion, and for over one hundred fifty years American schools favored Christianity. Consequently, cultural respect for Christianity was popular. This does not mean that most Americans were Christians, but it does imply most were influenced by Christianity. The cultural Christian count was high. Clearly, our Founding Fathers knew what was needed to establish good government and a civilized society. Yet even with this, our present society exhibits new levels of hostility toward Christian institutions and individuals, and few are asking why. Even fewer are asking “What are the spiritual/social/political ramifications of evangelical indifference to present anti-Christian hostilities?”

Christian students and teachers are increasingly denied the opportunity for free public expression that is available to others. Bill Donohue’s book Secular Sabotage – How Liberals Are Destroying Religion and Culture in America gives multiple examples of discrimination against Christians as well as David Limbaugh’s book, Persecution – How Liberals Are Waging War against Christianity. Alan Sears of the Alliance Defense Fund reported that, in America, for “a growing number of cases, government officials are seeking to revoke church tax-exemptions, seize their land, demolish their sanctuaries and sentence their pastors to prison . . . and many Christians are unaware of this disturbing reality.”[3] (Don’t expect the secular news to report this or the new zoning law restrictions against congregations and Christian schools in various communities.) Ravi Zacharias, an international apologist and evangelist, in an article titled, “Defending Christianity in a Secular Culture,” said, “The average church member today is unprepared and ill-equipped to face the attacks that are coming at us full-force.”[4] Christians have been quietly, but systematically, losing ground with society, culture, politics, public education --and it has been our own fault. Bruce N. Shortt, author of The Harsh Truth About Public Schools, agrees: “We have inadvertently been accomplices in the destruction of our children, our culture, and our faith.”[5] Cal Thomas, a prize-winning writer, past NBC journalist, and now a syndicated columnist, asked and answered the same question: “Whose fault is it?… [It] is the fault of those who still believe in these [Christian] values and roots [and] for not letting out a howl of protest against those who would forbid us to reconsider the thoughts and beliefs that made us great.”[6] And John W. Whitehead, president of the Rutherford Institute and author of The Sealing of America, projects our future. “If the church fails to have a significant witness in public education, where most

---

of the next generation will be trained, then the next generation will inevitably be more hostile to Christianity than this generation. That could spell disaster.” A reviewer on the back page of Whitehead’s book wrote: “Christians must share a large part of the blame for the erosion of our God-given and constitutionally guaranteed freedoms and the rise of atheistic secularism.” Reverend Charles F. Stanley in Confronting Casual Christianity explained, “The Christians of this nation are abundantly supplied with many resources, spiritual and material, and yet we are making a pitiful showing in our influence and impact on society.” Even the front cover of Newsweek recently announced “The Decline and Fall of Christian America.” It stated: “While we remain a nation decisively shaped by religious faith, our politics and our culture are, in the main, less influenced by movements and arguments of an explicitly Christian character than they were even five years ago.” Reverend Charles R. Swindoll’s The Church Awakening – An Urgent Call For Renewal, expressed our problem in a similar format. “Postmodernism began in the academic community, oozed into leadership, then morphed into Congress, public schools, and our homes. Sadly, the slumbering evangelical church has also now slid into the murky waters of a post-Christian swamp.”

In this work we will wrestle not only with the cause of spiritual, social, and cultural decadence, but the primary reason Americans are asking “Why are we troubled by Islamic terrorists?” Why is our economy suffering? Why are Americans worried about losing jobs, stagnant wages, rising taxes, falling investments, and increasing government controls?” There is an underlying reason for all this that most secular Americans overlook, but evangelicals are more likely to perceive. Could it be that a significant measure of God’s blessings have been removed from America? (Dr. John MacArthur’s 2007 National Day of Prayer sermon stressed the idea that God has abandoned America.) Evangelicals should humbly ask themselves how we are part of the problem as some evangelical leaders have proposed. What are we overlooking? We could start by asking ourselves, how readily do we grieve with God’s crying heart over our society? Do we know what concerns God has about public education? How can we have God’s blessings if we don’t know or care how God feels about our public policies that effect so many so young? As the children are mentally, spiritually, and physically abused in our government schools with hundreds of Sunday school classrooms empty Monday through Friday in every major city in America, how can we not help but grieve the Holy Spirit as He sees the children crying and Christian resources abandoned? Are we crying with God’s concerns? How can we ignore our public education policy that leaves so many young people abused and still claim to have the love of Jesus? We only begin to

[B] Jane Clayson on the Early Show asked Billy Graham’s daughter, Anne Graham Lotz, “How could God let something like this [terrorists’ attack New York city] happen?” Anne immediately replied, “I believe God is deeply saddened by this, just as we are, but for years we’ve been telling God to get out of our schools, to get out of our government and to get out of our lives. And being the gentleman He is, I believe He has calmly backed out. How can we expect God to give us His blessing and His protection if we demand He leave us alone?” [Robert Thoburn, author of The Children Trap, believes that neither drugs nor violence will drive Christians from the public schools, but only a poor athletic program (pg XVII). If this is our priority how can we even begin to sense God’s heart for public education or have God’s blessings? Blair Adams and Joel Stein, authors of Who Owns the Children? – Education as Religious War Book 5 wrote, “We have ceded responsibilities and powers to the State because we were unwilling to take up the burden of exercising them ourselves” (pg 285).]
approach God’s heart when we become outraged enough to free hurting children trapped in atheistic humanistic schools. Is it possible to get any closer to the heart of God than when one sacrifices for the freedom and benefit of others?

But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Jesus the Christ - Matthew 18:6 (KJV)

Do evangelicals share these same sentiments of Christ? If so, then why are our public schools in such a mess? A June 2004 Washington Post-ABC News poll less than five months away from the presidential election found that only 9 percent of adults nationwide listed education as the single most important issue in their vote for president, far behind the economy (26 percent), the war in Iraq (19 percent), and the U.S. campaign against terrorism. Other than parents and teachers, most Americans believe public education is a priority that should be placed after our concerns on the economy and war on terrorism. In contrast, Christ taught that true spirituality was connected to a concern over the “least of these” (Matthew 25:40-46). What if evangelicals, like the general public, are not in synchronization with God’s priorities? Could it be that evangelicals are as materialistic and worldly as the general public? Our emphasis on personal peace and affluence becomes clearly evident with our conversations intensely focused on careers, investments, the economy, retirement, and the politics that surround it all. Should we be surprised if God begins judgment on our personal peace and affluence? The prophet Amos once told God’s people that God tried to get their attention by limiting their ability to produce as well. No one noticed God’s hint of causing a depressed economy except Amos (Amos 4:9). How can a loving God allow this? Carnality and secularism are two similar forms of god-blindness with the result of failing to perceive the full consequences of sin or the character of God. Could we be in the same spiritual state as Amos’ generation once was? Because of our god-blindness, we are blind to our own carnalities. Carnality tends to minimize personal favorite sins and amplify the gravity of others’ sins. Could this not also play out in political stalemates and economic gridlock while each side blames the other? In truth, both Republicans and Democrats share the blame. Are we doing this to ourselves because of our carnality or is God because we have rejected Him? But isn’t the rejection of God the cause for carnality and carnality characterized by blindness to the consequences of favored sins (Judges 16:20)? How blind are we?

In speaking on the subject of “The Problem of Defection” (Insight for Living, 2/13/2004), Rev. Charles Swindoll said, “Heart rending for the child of God, to know that his family will be trained in schools whose hands are tied! So that the great desire of the development of the faith in the children, you can’t find it except under special education where you pay for it. And so you send them to Christian schools, so that they might know the things of God through the day. And godly teachers in public school cannot do it! I spoke to one this morning who said, I’m having to change. Because the principles I want to teach to my little kindergarten children, my principal said, ‘Don’t teach that. You’re too ridged.’”

Rev. Swindoll, then said, “Listen to Billy Graham.”
In a declining culture one of its characteristics is that the ordinary people are unaware what is happening. Mr. Average-man is comfortable in his complacency, as unconcerned as a silverfish in a carton of discarded magazines on world affairs. He’s not asking any questions. Modern man has become a spectator of world events, observing on his television screen without becoming at all involved. He doesn’t seem to realize what’s happening to him. He doesn’t understand that his world is on fire and he is about to be burned with it.

The same could be said of many evangelicals—complacently comfortable in their ignorance and unconcerned to what’s happening and why. For evangelicals that do notice how bad things are, many have something the average man on the street doesn’t have--a theology that leaves them expecting things are to go from bad to worse in these last days, so we excuse ourselves mistakenly thinking we can do nothing in opposition to the evil we too are witnessing. This self-fulfilling prophecy is just one of our many mistakes with serious ramifications to follow. Like Mr. Average, most evangelicals do not understand what is about to happen to them either.

Unlike many books on this topic, this one will not leave you in a depressed state with the mistaken belief that the future will only get worse. That could happen, but God has given us a choice. In this book hopeful specifics are offered for those who desire to see a better day for America. We will look at meaningful and practical options that are more spiritual than evangelicals perceived for reversing this sad trend we are now witnessing. Jesus the Christ has given us the choice to “Ask and it will be given to you; seek and you will find; knock and the door will be opened to you” (Matthew 7:7 NIV) and has promised that the “gates of hell will not prevail against his Church” even if it is in the minority (Matthew 16:18). The late American cultural anthropologist Margaret Mead would agree. “Never doubt that a small group of thoughtful, committed citizens can change the world. Indeed, it is the only thing that ever has.”12 While the first Christians were accused of turning their world upside down (Acts 17:6), our society, politics, and culture are being turned upside down instead by a very committed humanistic minority. Chapter 9 holds the surprising information identifying who these people are and how they are doing it. Opposing such secular groups is more spiritual than the average evangelical perceives and is one means to bringing Americans back to God-honoring consciousness.

The writer of Chronicles reported that the men of Issachar were people “who understood the times and knew what Israel should do” (1 Chronicles 12:32). In contrast, evangelical discernment is pathetic. Many do not understand the primary issues and root cause of our social problems, nor are they seeking the response that God desires. It is a rare evangelical who reads nonfiction books, prays consistently, and then raises his periscope higher than personal, immediate concerns to see what is happening all around. Consequently, this ignorance shackles evangelicals in self-limiting ministries. A vast silence from within our sanctuaries on these issues promotes even more ignorance. This ignorance breeds apathy and a dull, mind-numbing acceptance of the problems. Robert H. Bork in Slouching Towards Gomorrah stated: “With each new evidence of deterioration, we lament for a moment, and then become accustomed to it.”13 Evangelicals are guilty of
this same sin. Habitually drugged by their traditional methods of doing ministry, evangelicals are unavailable as salt and light for the foundational issue of our times. The late Dr. Francis Schaeffer, founder of the L’Abri Fellowship and considered by many to be the profound Christian intellect of the past 100 years, described the present evangelical condition succinctly:

_We are not only immoral, we are stupid. I’m not sure which is worse._14

Dr. Francis Schaeffer

Take the issue of kids killing kids at their school. Since the Columbine Massacre, a blood-red stream of violence has continued in our neighborhood elementary, middle, and high schools. At least forty-one more students and teachers have died at their schools. This includes a security guard and a bus driver. During this period, an additional forty-seven students have also been wounded in murderous attempts by fellow students. In all, there were at least eighty-eight attempts, successful and unsuccessful, to kill students and teachers at American schools since the Columbine Massacre. These are campus figures that exclude the Columbine statistics and the violence on college campuses. Some acts of school violence include the murdering of a few parents and a grandparent before coming to school to murder the classmates.1[C] These murdered guardians are not included in this latest school violence count either. Also not counted are the multiple uncovered Columbine copycat plots with the ability to kill, but timely discovered. Off-campus violence of children killing others in their homes and neighborhoods are not counted in this study either. The statistics of neighborhood-youth killings go even much higher than the school-killing count. Other forms of violence include hostage taking, poisoning attempts, and fights on or off school grounds. There is sufficient evidence to believe that many school forms of violence are not even recorded or reported by school authorities. William Kilpatrick, author of _Why Johnny Can’t Tell Right from Wrong_, has estimated “525,000 attacks, shakedowns, and robberies occur in public high schools [in America] each month.”15

Now add the problem of sexual harassment from male and female public school teachers. It’s just below the public radar, but this problem is much more prevalent than the Catholic Church ever had with priests.1[D] While the secular media is focused on the Catholic Church, public school authorities have quietly ignored these problems. Do you ever wonder why the secular media is more focused on the Church’s sins than the secular public schools’ sins? You should wonder. Perception, real or not, has voting power. We are manipulated for our votes more than we realize. Humanistic media protects humanistic schools. Could it be that the secular media has a carnal blind spot as well?

---

[C] See Appendix A: School Violence

[D] See Appendix B: Public School Sex Abuse.
And when anything bad happens in a public school, someone says, “I never thought it could happen here!”

Schools are expected to be the gates to commonly accepted morals and civilized values. Parents and citizens hope that as the children pass through these gates, the children will be the better for it. It’s easy to get caught up in school unity and pride after a game, school play, or concert. Yet, despite such positive feelings of unity, something very negative is happening in our government schools. An honest evaluation will show not only the cause for school violence, but the seeds for society’s decadence as well. What is learned in school is expressed in culture, becomes a voting political philosophy, and finally a lifestyle in society.

Teachers blame the parents, while parents blame the culture, and the kids blame their peers. Everyone has someone else to blame, except this author. I am an evangelical and freely admit that the blame belongs to us first. Society, with all its dynamic exchanges, is a complicated multiple feedback system. People are influenced by society and society is driven by people. Engineers will freely admit that feedback systems are the most complicated systems to troubleshoot. Feedback systems, by nature, promote endless loops of interconnected subsystems. Like a dog chasing its tail, the troubleshooter can easily cycle endlessly and repeatedly throughout the system without a solution. Thus feedback systems can seem impossible to locate the origin of the primary cause of trouble. The secret is to break open the feedback elements at the right point. If this isn’t done, one can instead waste valuable time and resources on fixing the symptoms and not the problem. Evangelicals should be applauded for their opposition to social evils.
However, evangelicals have been guilty of fighting society’s symptoms and not the primary cause for decades. Consequently, evangelicals are presently stuck in this ineffective mode. The one possible exception is our efforts in evangelism, but in our secular society, it has had marginal results.

In our example, we will begin our troubleshooting by recognizing that all bad teachers were once impressionable children others influenced. This is also true for liberal judges. This is where we will break open the feedback loops of social influence. So the primary critical troubleshooting question is not what the Supreme Court has decided, whose political party is in power, abortion, homosexuality, or even a traditional marriage amendment. These are all very important issues, but the primary issue involves the main influence on children that yields an increasingly secular and decadent society. Children will grow up and serve in the Supreme Court, become involved with a political party, and eventually form opinions on abortion and homosexuality based on the primary influence on them. Unfortunately, this primary influence is anti-Christian, and this too is our fault.

Sociologist James Davison Hunter admitted, “There is nothing [in Law, consensus, psychology, literature, technology, wealth or the political thundering of the Christian Right] that can rebut the challenge of nihilism.”[E] (Bracketed items here are Hunter’s comments too.)

If we look at society in terms of the main institutions of influence and responsibility, we see four main categories: family, media (internet, literature, movies, music, videogames, etc.), school, and the Church. Yet even with the school problems of violence and sexually abusive teachers already mentioned, the Church is the primary culprit, even more than the family and the media. How can I say this? Evangelicals lack a unified plan to oppose the ever-growing government education policy of VOID, yet to be defined, and this failure is connected to evangelical ignorance of the social, political, and spiritual ramifications of such public philosophy of VOID. Unfortunately, evangelicals also lack a unified entity to oppose the well-organized humanistic self-interest groups that exist to establish the philosophy and public policies of VOID on children. Sadly, evangelical ignorance, lack of vision, and organization has led to multiple missed opportunities. This also becomes painfully obvious with a careful review of Columbine High School’s massacre without the distraction of the secular media’s spin. It’s been thirteen years since the Columbine High School massacre, and evangelicals have done nothing to oppose the fundamental causes of VOID-induced violence that continues. In the following chapters we will examine multiple factors contributing to evangelical failures.

So with this, let’s start with Brooks Brown, a friend of the Columbine killers. Three years after the Columbine Massacre, Brooks published his book, No Easy Answers--The Truth Behind Death at Columbine. He stated, “I knew we were nowhere near closure on Columbine. We still aren’t… I knew that there were more Erics and Dylans out there, 

---[E]---

Webster’s New World College Dictionary defines “nihil” as nothing and “nihilism” as the denial of the existence of any basis for knowledge or truth; the general rejection of customary beliefs in morality, religion, etc. It is the belief that there is no meaning or purpose in existence.
and I knew why their disenchantment was growing. I could see the void they were falling into – and I knew that void was getting bigger.  

But can evangelicals even hear the cries of VOID, and do they understand the reasons why it exists and grows? Do they even care to know how this VOID affects society? Will they ever do anything about it? About 1000 B.C., the wise King Solomon said that wisdom shouts from our streets and gates (Proverbs 8). But who is listening to the cries of VOID! VOID! echoing from our public gates? Many evangelicals are deaf to these cries. The music of their truncated spirituality is distracting and their sound bite theologies inhibiting. (Chapter 7 covers some of the most popular inhibiting sound bite theologies among evangelicals. “Truncated spirituality” is Francis Schaeffer’s term of limited spirituality.) Thus, many evangelicals fail to sense just how repugnant they are in God’s sight.

Troubleshooting society’s problems is similar to troubleshooting a stalled automobile. Anyone who has ever successfully Troubleshooted a non-functioning automobile can always look back in time and see how that car was shouting out the reason for its problem. The best troubleshooters learn the language of the broken machine, carefully listen, and then fix it. Daniel J. Boorstin, author of The Discoverers, said that it wasn’t ignorance that impeded the discoveries in the various sciences, but the illusion of “facts and dogmas of the learned.” People thought they understood how the world worked. These knowledgeable ones thus missed multiple discoveries. Their mistaken beliefs caused them to miss important opportunities. The discoverers of new knowledge were successful because they kept looking for the real answers. Troubleshooters also sometimes testify how an important clue was initially missed in the processing of diagnoses because of assumptions held to be true but were not. These “facts” were simply distractions that blinded discoverers from the real truth. It’s easy to be distracted and overlook an important clue and get stuck without a solution because of other “facts” that hold the main attention and primary focus. For our school violence examples, why should one consider looking for any other cause if it is believed that overcommitted parents, peer rejection, violent video games, and guns are the prime contributors to school violence? There is another factor that has greater influence than all these.

This is our present problem and dilemma as well. We have heard from the experts and are prisoners of the popular secular media’s focus. We now think we know why school violence exists. But do we know why so much VOID exists and how it contributes to society’s problems? Since the problem of children killing children persists, this suggests that as troubleshooters to school and social problems, we have much more listening and debugging to do. This will involve setting our biases and preconceived ideas aside and looking again for reasons that have contributed to an unquestioning acceptance of VOID throughout our society.

In the following chapters we will cover why the acceptance of VOID permeates our very secular post-Christian society, why its popularity grows, and how it contributes to social decadence. But what can one person do with this knowledge? If only one person learns clearly this evidence in one day and only tells two others on the next day and no others,
and each of these tells two others on the third day and no others, we have what is known as a Geometric Progression. In only thirty days over 1 billion people will also know the evidence. Don’t believe me? Use your calculator or see your friendly neighborhood mathematician, engineer, physicist, or simply look up geometric progression on the internet. This too has voting, volunteering, and society-changing power.

Obviously, communication is not our problem, especially with the internet. Reception is our problem because of the many distractions of profits, pleasures, choices of entertainment, and preconceived biases.[F] Evangelicals also process unbiblical biases that are real impediments to God’s will on earth. (Chapters 6 and 7 will address some major biases among evangelicals.) In simple terms, the challenge includes motivating Christians to simply turn off their televisions and grieve with the heart of God over real hurting people and lost souls. On more complex issues a number of significant books have been written already to alert Christians and provide answers. Unfortunately many of these books are never read by most evangelicals. This is also how evangelicals have rejected God’s knowledge just as Hosea’s generation did (Hosea 4:6). This book attempts to redirect Christians back to these Holy Spirit inspired paper sermons. Look under Resources at the end of each chapter. Some evangelicals sense that we need another Great Awakening. These authors have laid the foundation for not only another Great Awakening, but means for significant personal spiritual growth as well. And if I have failed to persuade the reader, these authors are much more likely to succeed.

Today we applaud Corrie Ten Boom, Dietrich Bonhoeffer, Martin Niemoller, and others who resisted the Nazis and protected Jews at significant personal risk and sacrifice. We also applaud the Religious Society of Friends (Quakers), Congregationalists, Wesleyans, Reformed Presbyterians and others who helped the passage of freeing slaves by supplying safe houses along the Underground Railroad. These German and American Christians were in the minority. Most Christians silently watched their Jewish neighbors taken away by the Nazis and black families divided and sold with no regard to the marriage bond or family relationships. Everyone had their biblical justifications for not getting involved. For many German Christians it was, the powers that be are ordained of God (a faulty application of Romans 13:1 that will be explained later). For many Southern Christians, slavery was ordained by God (a misreading of Genesis 9:24-27 and other passages) and abolition was of the devil. Besides, the Church’s primary concern is the Gospel of Jesus Christ, not politics or the reforming of this world. Many similar arguments are repeated among evangelicals today as they too silently watch the horrible social abuses of others. Similar theological “facts” have contributed to our blindness too and have rendered us ineffective in troubleshooting our society and affecting it for Christ.

Concerning the slavery question, a closer look shows that Northern Christians were as guilty as Southern Christians. Steven J. Keillor admits, “Few [Northern Christians] believed the U.S. government could end slavery in the Southern states, nor did most want

[F] 14 “The seed that fell among thorns stands for those who hear, but as they go on their way they are choked by life’s worries, riches and pleasures, and they do not mature.” 15 “But the seed on good soil stands for those with a noble and good heart, who hear the word, retain it, and by persevering produce a crop.” Jesus the Christ - Luke 8:14-15 (NIV)
to fight a war to end it. Constitutional compromises, cotton’s profitability in a global textile industry and two parties committed to keeping slavery out of national politics stalled any national anti-slavery movement.”\(^{19}\) Keillor admitted that “Revivals helped to renew and radicalize the anti-slavery movement.”\(^{20}\) However, even with this, “most evangelicals never embraced abolitionism.”\(^{21}\) In fact, “Northern mobs attacked abolitionists’ printing offices, meeting and leaders, [because] …some Northerners profited from slavery.”\(^{22}\) An honest evaluation shows that compromise, indifference, favoring the status quo for profits, and blinded by wrong theologies infect evangelicals (white and black) today as well. Evangelical carnalities fortified with twisted biblical references remains our daunting challenge. All such defiance against God’s heart deserves God’s judgment. This is our sacred rebellion. It is a mistaken spirituality.

Steven J. Keillor, author of *God’s Judgments – Interpreting History and the Christian Faith*, says the judgment of God is not only a curtain-dropping event, but also a “sifting out” process where hearts are tested. Keillor believes that in this process God gives “the wicked a chance to repent and the righteous to fall away.”\(^{23}\) Keillor adds, “Our cultural mindset hinders us from seeing ourselves as vulnerable human beings caught up in a stream of events over which we have little or no control.”\(^{24}\) If divine judgment against sin fell on the innocent Son, then how much more is judgment on sinful nations and individuals a valid gospel theme, albeit ‘hard and unpopular’?\(^{25}\) Keillor asserts, “We cannot take God’s judgments in history off the table for this generation—a move that Scripture does not authorize us to make.”\(^{26}\) In his book: *The Holiness of God*, RC Sproul says that “God is infinite, and God is gracious. We experience the grace of an infinite God, but grace is not infinite. God set limits to His patience and forbearance.”\(^{27}\) We are witnessing this today. God’s intermittent judgments are God’s hints that we need to seek Him.

If we were at Starbucks, you could ask all the questions that are important to you first. By this technique it’s likely to capture and quickly answer any opposition that may exist against this thesis. Obviously, such an option is not available in this format. Because multiple evangelical carnal biases exist in opposition to this thesis, it’s likely the reader will need to exercise a measure of patience until his or her specific questions are addressed. Yet the patient, diligent reader will be rewarded with biblical answers that challenge the typical evangelical response – *I’m already pleasing God. What else can I do? Don’t blame Christians for society’s problems! Christians have done a lot of good already! How can God be upset with us?* Hopefully, readers will have the courage to honestly evaluate their true spirituality with real open minds. Chapter 2 is foundational to this thesis. All other chapters flow from chapter 2.

Since the Columbine Massacre’s shouts of VOID were the most definitive connection between the VOID philosophy and criminal action, and since the VOID continues to echo from our community gates today – gates that are mistakenly believed to protect children, let us briefly go back in time and listen again, but with acute sensitivity for clues to the root cause of our social decadence.
Rachel Scott was a beautiful Christian girl from Columbine High School. She and Richard Castaldo were sitting on the grass and eating their lunch together near the school library on that fateful day—April 20, 1999. According to the Jefferson County Police official report, Rachel was the first one killed, and Richard was critically wounded in what would become known as America’s worst school shooting—a school massacre designed and implemented by Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold.

Just minutes earlier, Brooks Brown, author of No Easy Answers, met Eric just as Eric pulled his car into the school parking lot. Brooks sensed that something was wrong with Eric and quickly took Eric’s warning seriously when Eric said, “Brooks, I like you now. Get out of here. Go home.”28 They had had a falling out in friendship earlier, but it seemed to be mended now. Not wanting to antagonize his friend and still puzzled with Eric’s comments and behavior, Brooks decided to walk away. Brooks gives more details than the official report. “Rachel was struck twice in the legs and once in the torso; more bullets tore through Richard’s spine, leaving him paralyzed.”29

Brooks then admitted, “What happened to Rachel next is a mystery. Richard’s mother told NBC’s Dateline that when Richard first came out of surgery, he described the scene in detail. He said Rachel was approached by the shooters a second time and asked if she believed in God. She said yes, and they killed her.”30 (See Appendix C: The Columbine God Question – Why It’s Debated and the Ramifications.) Brooks didn’t say and neither was it in the official report, but Rachel was also shot in the head. Author, Wendy Murray Zoba reported this in her book, Day of Reckoning.

If God does not exist, then a profound and profane VOID does exist. The late Carl Sagan would say, “The cosmos is all that is or ever was or ever will be.” The secular Yale law professor Arthur Allen Leff admitted, “It looks as if we are all we have.” Richard Dawkins published The God Delusion. And Christopher Hitchens publicly debated, “It’s been demonstrated that we are not designed, but evolved via natural selection.”

Unless you assume a God, the question of life’s purpose is meaningless.

Bertrand Russell, atheist

Evangelicals need to crawl into the minds of people like this and understand that in a VOID worldview/mindset there is no intrinsic meaning or purpose; life is vain and void. By destroying so many young lives, as well as their own, the Columbine shooters testified to their firm belief in this VOID—a VOID that had been preached to them via taxpayer supported “neutral” government schools. It is unfortunate the shooters were not also asked, “And why do you believe in VOID?” However, the real mistakes are the evangelical failures of not realizing why this VOID mindset is growing, its deadly consequences, and how we are ignoring viable antidotes against it even now. Even more unfortunate is the evangelical failure of not publicizing the correlation between school violence, social decadence, and the VOID public policies that promotes it all. “Later, Richard told police that he remembers Rachel lying on the ground crying and that the shooters approached a second time but left him for dead. However, he no longer remembered whether Rachel was asked about her faith in her final moments. To this day,
he cannot recall what happened after he was shot.”

Brooks added that Richard’s mother, Connie Michalik, also told the Denver Rocky Mountain News on April 21, 1999 that “After he [Richard] got the breathing tube out, he was crying and upset, telling his mother how they taunted and teased her about God.”

Even though Rachel had a gentle outspoken Christian testimony, it was no secret. Brooks wrote, “She defied every expectation I’d ever had of a Christian.” (This should make one wonder what the other Columbine High School Christians were doing before this massacre and is addressed in Chapter 6. Their mistake is common among evangelicals and explains in part our ineffectiveness in evangelism.)

Note carefully, while Rachel was crying because of her first wounds, the shooter approached closer, asked if she believed in God, and then shot her in the head after she responded in the affirmative. Richard’s immediate testimony after surgery should hold its original meaning, especially since it parallels the testimonies from other Columbine students. Trauma and time can explain Richard’s mental repression and later response. Evangelicals also understand that spiritual forces are a viable factor too.

The limited few that were permitted to see the killer’s videos called the “Basement Videos,” reported that the girls at Columbine were described as “Christian God-loving whores.” Klebold said, “I am glad we killed Christ,” and Harris added, “I will shoot the Christian girls in the head.” Despite all this, investigators resisted admitting any anti-religious elements to the killers’ hostilities in the official report. Why are the secularists so biased with the public image of the story they seek to promote? (Appendix C is dedicated to exploring this question.) If the slightest evidence existed supporting the allegation that homosexuals and lesbians had been the targets of violence instead, would the secular investigators have censored the allegation? If Harris had said, “I will shoot the gays in the head!” would the secular media or secular investigators remain silent? Again, we need to ask, why does secular society respond as it does? How does their secular response affect our perceptions? And how do our perceptions affect our belief about secular schools with secular philosophies of VOID? Does this also contribute to our carnal blindness? Are there spiritual forces at work here too?

Wendy Murray Zoba, author of Day of Reckoning, said, “The sheriff’s office neglected to mention that three of the thirteen who died – Rachel Scott, Cassie Bernall, and a third student, whose parents did not want identified – died by gunshots to the temple at close range. All three had been known for their Christian leadership.”

A website reported: “One of the shooters, Dylan Klebold, had known Rachel since kindergarten and had even been the sound tech for a talent show she performed in, in 1998. Ironically, when the sound broke down, it was Dylan who saved the performance by hooking up a reserve tape deck. Rachel had been performing a mime dance ‘Watch the Lamb’ which portrayed Simon of Cyrene, who carried Jesus’ cross along part of the Via Dolorosa. That same mime dance was later performed behind her coffin during her funeral.”
Then later, a minister at Rachel Scott’s grave shouted out in grief: “Where are the prophets of God!?!?”

In truth, the prophets had already written and spoken years earlier, but evangelicals were neither reading nor listening. Who were these prophets and what were their warnings? More importantly, why do evangelicals persist in ignoring their warnings today? Why do evangelicals reject knowledge just as Hosea’s generation did (Hosea 4:6)? And why have evangelicals resisted in responding to Columbine’s clearly outspoken acts of godlessness? We--evangelicals have completely missed the opportunity to educate the public on the connection between belief in VOID and violence! We have bought into the secularist’s definition of neutrality, which isn’t, and then have vainly attempted to teach values in a God vacuum. We have also compromised and have sanctioned children to be saturated in the philosophy of VOID. By this and other means of dabbling with religious tokenism we have rejected God’s word to saturate our children in His Word (Deuteronomy 6:7). And as God’s knowledge is rejected, children suffer.

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’” Hosea 4:6 (NIV)

Please understand. God did not do this to our children. We did it to our children via God’s unbroken law of sowing and reaping (Hosea 8:7, Galatians 6:7), and for this God cries (Ezekiel 33:11, Matthew 23:37). What should we expect when we have permitted God’s laws to be ripped off school walls? (Could this also be connected to the mistaken notion with some evangelicals of emphasizing the New Testament over the Old as the only authoritative revelation of God’s present character? Too many evangelicals have rejected God’s Word of the Old Testament as well.) Obviously, much more must now be done than simply posting the Ten Commandments back up on classroom walls. Hosea’s statement that “God will ignore your children,” simply implies that God will remove His protecting hand and allow us to reap what we have sown. Dr. Schaeffer has pointed out that we …*have had such light as few others have ever possessed. We have stamped upon that light in our culture. Our cinemas, our novels, our art museums, our schools scream out as they stamp upon that light*” and then asked, “Do you think that the holy God will not judge?” (God’s judgment is real. See Luke 12:47-48.) Indeed, how can a righteous God ignore our cavalier attitude of humanistic influence on children? Phillip E. Johnson, Professor Emeritus of Law at the University of California at Berkeley and former clerk to the U.S. Supreme Court adds, “It is clearly irrational to assume that a God

---

Dr. Erwin Lutzer told his congregation that God cannot bless us as a nation when we -

- justify homosexual relationships and call it diversity.
- lead the world in the production and distribution of pornography and call it free speech.
- kill pre-born infants and call it choice.
- treat the poor with benign neglect and call it welfare.
- dismiss God as irreverent from public life and hold God unwelcome in our universities, colleges, schools, science, and government under the policy of separation of church and state.

who is real can safely be ignored.”

It’s equally irrational to believe we can have God on our own terms.

The Columbine Massacre occurred during the Y2K panic year—1999. Y2K was much more interesting among evangelicals because of the rampant fearful speculation that was to come to our world in the new millennium year, 2000. Evangelicals heard about Y2K on Christian radio, ministers mentioned Y2K in their Sunday morning sermons while other churches had special Y2K speakers, and some Christian authors profited by Y2K. (One Christian publisher admitted in 1999, “This is the year to sell fear.”) Yet even with the initial knowledge that the Columbine Massacre had targeted the lives of minorities, athletes, and Christian students, evangelicals were still much more concerned with phantom Y2K losses of electricity, water, gas, and food than the causes behind the Columbine Massacre. The Columbine Massacre did not touch the evangelical concern as Y2K did and possibly because Y2K was just the kind of thing we expected in the last days. Evangelical fascination with Y2K matched their fascination with end-time prophecy. However, such feared Y2K projections among evangelicals never materialized. The fearful speculations never occurred. Apparently, too many carnal evangelicals were distracted by, and attracted to the wrong prophets. What a waste of time and money! Y2K was a major distraction for evangelicals! This too was spiritually driven but it wasn’t perceived.

How blind are we? How stupid are we? How carnal are we?

It’s been thirteen years since the Columbine Massacre that left twelve students and one teacher dead and twenty-four others wounded. While passing Rachel’s death off as a “God thing,” or with the popular sound bite theology, “God’s in control,” evangelicals never did wake up to how they significantly contributed to the Columbine Massacre. Even Darrel Scott, Rachel’s father admitted, “I think that in some cases, we have brought hostility on ourselves.” (This is the father of the same Rachel that was the first one murdered at Columbine.)

In contrast to the pathetic and typical evangelical response to all this, the wise King Solomon actively pursued the reasons for madness and folly. Then I applied myself to the understanding of wisdom, and also of madness and folly, but I learned that this, too, is a chasing after the wind. For with much wisdom comes much sorrow; the more knowledge, the more grief” Ecclesiastes 1:17-18 (NIV).

Trying to make sense of our social bits and pieces of chaos seems at first like chasing after the wind. While searching for reasons and primary causes of social decadence seems like an impossible puzzle to assemble and understand, this is not a futile exercise. When this puzzle is assembled, a definite pattern of cause and effect between ideas, beliefs and behavior can be discovered. We can connect strange Islamic beliefs to radical Islamic terrorists. Why then are we hesitant to connect our erroneous sound-bite theologies to our social sins? If we truly believe ideas affect behavior, why do we fail to continually resist the public policy of VOID? (Chapter 5 holds the connection between belief in VOID and decadent acts. Chapters 6, 7, and 8 shows our pathetic evangelical history and
reasons for our ineffective response today.) We need to identify and purge strange beliefs from among ourselves as well – 1 Thessalonians 5:21. If evangelicals understood that much of our inhibitions are of our own making, we could be much more effective in our witness for Christ.

Parents want moral children and sociological data exist to show that the teaching of values in a God vacuum is in vain. Some ungodly parents may escape this consequence for a moment, but this remains a gamble. Dangerously false ideas lead to decadent behaviors in all classes of society as our newspapers clearly report. It’s only a matter of time. When evangelicals realize how their truncated spirituality has promoted false ideas, how such ideas yielded passivity among evangelicals, and how this passivity to public policy has yielded social decadence (see chapters 5, 6, 7, and 8), evangelicals will then grieve over this and other missed opportunities. Then, Solomon’s proverb will be complete. Increased wisdom increases sorrow.

The real surprise is how evangelicals have ignorantly promoted godlessness in our culture. The theme of this book will be how our American evangelical culture and apathy have contributed significantly to the Columbine Massacre in particular and social decadence in general. Many evangelicals are clueless. A few others know what we should do but are paralyzed with fear. As this picture of our sins comes into focus, we should repent. America needs a Great Awakening, but too many evangelicals are too stupid to know what to repent from. We are truly blinded by our carnality. We think the other side needs to repent first. While we blame others for causing social decadence, our seeker-sensitive ministers cowardly resist warning us of our sins. (Chapter 8 has the heartbreaking details.) In contrast to all this, the Chronicles writer revealed God’s focus upon His own people to repent first:

*If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.* 2 Chronicles 7:14 (KJV)

Peter Greig, author of *Awakening Cry*, asks: “Why are we [evangelicals] currently sub-normal? and What are we to do to change? And if God revives us, what then? The believer whose greatest longing in life is just revival is like a person whose objective is merely to get out of bed in the morning without ever desiring to go anywhere or achieve anything with their wakefulness.” Peter adds, “We [in the West] have often perceived revival purely in terms of personal sin and salvation and failed to acknowledge the seriousness of corporate sin, which requires corporate redemption. However, it is clear that historically revival’s impact is far more profound than just the sum of a large number of salvations. Social transformation (as well as personal salvation) has branded awakenings from first-century Ephesus to those of eighteenth-century Britain and twentieth-century Wales and Argentina.” Francis Schaeffer offered a similar observation, “But always in every revival there’s been a third element, it has always brought social change. Cambridge historians would tell you, who aren’t Christians that if it wasn’t for the Wesleyan revival and the social change that Wesley’s revival had brought, that England would have had its own form of the French Revolution. It was
Wesley saying people must be treated correctly, and dealing down into the social needs of the day that made it possible for England to have its bloodless revolution in contrast to France’s bloody revolution.” Peter admits, “Understanding the profound social implications of the gospel, these [Wesleyan] militants set about challenging injustice and providing for the oppressed. Wesley stood out in particular as he began reforming the prisons, establishing food and clothing dispensaries for the poor and developing schools. The first Trade Union and the abolition of slavery find their roots in this revival.”

Maybe we should begin by praying to be humbly receptive to God’s plan on how we are to cultivate the spiritual awakening for our times. This obedience will require personal sacrificial effort. Such serious seekers will promote the next Great Awakening.

If evangelicals could wake up, get out of their beds, and visit a typical American classroom, they could become revived with a passion for change. This next chapter provides such a virtual reality test. As we do this, let us also be honest with ourselves as we ponder our thoughts and feelings and observe the reactions of our fellow students around us. Many readers may object going back to school. If they skip this class, they forfeit very important foundational material. Life ensures there will always be a test. Our continued school violence and social decadence is evidence we are failing in this test and have sanctioned children to wallow in a mindset of VOID. We need to understand how and why the belief in VOID exists, grows among our youth, and what we can do to oppose it. Successfully opposing this secular belief will make accepting Christ much more likely (Colossians 2:8, 2 Timothy 2:24-26). Belief in something always exists, even if it’s the philosophy of VOID. Philosophical / religious vacuums never exist, not even in government schools with a supposed Separation of Church and State policy. Because this is a spiritual conflict, don’t be surprised of interruptions and distractions that will prohibit reading the books or seeing the DVDs suggested as supporting resources in any of the following chapters.

As we begin our study, let us focus on three basic questions:

1) What is the foundational basis for our secular society?
2) What are the ramifications for any secular society?
3) How have evangelicals contributed to our godless society?

Answers to questions 1 and 3 will explain why people believe in VOID. Answers to question 2 will explain the nature of VOID—-the expected behaviors and social outcomes. Together this will explain how we can be much more effective in our evangelism. While the following class in the next chapter is fictitious, the lessons are not, nor are the students’ reported questions and reactions. The lessons and students’ reactions are real. The material is borrowed from multiple textbooks (see italicized text) and is typical of presentations that hundreds of thousands of American students receive. Obviously, this is a guerrilla warfare contest. This implies that this conflict’s intensity will vary over time.

[H] Two books with historical evidence of Christianity’s positive influences are: 1) What If Jesus Had Never Been Born? by D. James Kennedy and Jerry Newcombe and 2) Under The Influence – How Christianity Transformed Civilization by Dr. Alvin J. Schmidt.
and location and will be different for each student. But do not be mistaken, this conflict is real in one form or another for all students. Because of this conflict, many students believe in the VOID as the only reality. This belief in VOID increases on a daily basis simply because too many evangelicals are ignorant, fearful, or simply apathetic.

Suggested Scripture Reading:

- **When God’s judgment is not recognized**: Amos 4:6-13
- **Commands to instruct and what happens when we fail**: Deuteronomy 6:1-9, Judges 2:10, 21:25, Matthew 28:18-20
- **The results of having spirituality/God on our own terms**: 2 Chronicles 24:20-25

Resources:

Websites:
- http://www.ifmypeople.org
- http://www.butifmypeople.org

DVDs:

1) IndoctriNation – Public Schools and the Decline of Christianity in America  
   Website: www.www.IndoctriNationmovie.com

2) Agenda – Grinding America Down  
   Website: www.agendadocumentary.com
   This documentary explains how and why American culture has so radically and quickly changed and who are the forces of influence. Agenda also projects America’s future with clear evidence unless the Church gets involved. Ted Baehr of Movieguide says, “AGENDA is absolutely brilliant…”

Article: “Country a Mess? Blame the Church” by Dr. Frank Turek  
Source: crossexamined.org and then click on “Articles.” Note: Dr Frank Turek & Norman L. Geisler authored: *I Don’t Have Enough FAITH to Be an ATHEIST*, Crossway Books – A Division of Good News Publishers, Wheaton, Illinois.

Magazine:

Whistleblower, Volume 14, No. 4, April 2005,  
Issue: *Why Are Christians Losing America?*  
Website: www.worldNetDaily.com  
P.O. Box 1087, Grants Pass, OR, 97528, 541-474-1776

Books:

1) *Day of Reckoning*, Columbine and the Search for America’s Soul,  
   Wendy Murray Zoba, Brazos Press, A Division of Baker Book House Co,  
   P.O. Box 6287, Grand Rapids, MI 49516-6287
2) *Deliver Us From Evil*, Ravi Zacharias
   - Restoring the Soul in a Disintegrating Culture
   W Publishing Group (www.wpublishinggroup.com)

3) *The Devil’s Delusion*, Atheism and Its Scientific Pretensions, by David Berlinski
   Basic Books, A member of the Perseus Books Group, New York,
   (www.davidberlinski.org)  **Dr. Berlinski, a Jewish agnostic with wit and insight, makes hilarious sport of atheism’s scientific claims.**

4) *The Stealing Of America*, John W. Whitehead
   Crossway Books, Westchester, Illinois – A Division of Good News Publishers

5) *The Great Evangelical Disaster*, Francis A. Schaeffer
   Crossway Books, Westchester, Illinois – A Division of Good News Publishers
   A summary of this book may be seen at:

6) *Awakening Cry* – Once again God is commissioning revivalists, reformers, and rebels for the ultimate cause, Pete Greig.
   Silver Fish Publishing, in association with Novio Publishing.

7) *The Rebirth of America*, Editor: Nancy Leigh DeMoss
   Published by The Arthur S. DeMoss Foundation
   **This is a beautiful book with lots of photographs. This book covers a wide selection of general issues involving history, present day issues, and public policies with stories of spiritual renewals. It would be a shame to hide this book on a shelf and not leave it in an accessible place. One cannot breeze through it without picking up bite-size bits of wisdom and inspiration for hope.**
Chapter 2: The Class of the Secret Agenda

Welcome class to Biology 101. I hope everyone had a great summer. I’m Mr. Thompson, and as you can see from the syllabus that is being passed around, we will be covering quite a bit of material in this semester. So let’s get started. We will have time for discussion in the last 10 minutes of this class. Hopefully, we can begin to get acquainted with each other at that time. Please note my office hours and email address at the bottom of this syllabus and please also check your name off on the attendance roster.

To the religious students present in this class, I want to assure you that it is not my intention to offend anyone. This year marks the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of Charles Darwin’s *The Origin of Species*. However, every so often, scientists stir up controversy when they explain part of the world that was considered beyond natural explanation – that is, belonging to the ‘supernatural.’ This is sometimes true when moral codes are interwoven with religious narratives. Today, as then, society has its sets of standards. Today, as then, those standards may be called into question when a new natural explanation runs counter to supernatural belief. Systematic observations, hypotheses, predictions, tests – in all these ways, science differs from systems of belief that are based on faith, force, or simple consensus.¹

So with this, let me start with Charles Darwin and his impact on biology. Charles Darwin was born and grew up at a time in which the prevailing view was that all species were fixed and immutable from the beginning of creation. From an early age, Darwin was interested in natural history. Then at twenty-two years old, Darwin was invited to be the naturalist for the H.M.S Beagle in 1831. This was a ship that was chartered to complete a survey of the South American coast. This voyage was to last four years, nine months, and two days.

Darwin was a careful student in his observations. At various locations Darwin noticed slight variations between similar species. For twenty years after his return to England, Darwin would ponder the data that he had collected. Darwin concluded that all organisms were not fixed and immutable, as was popularly believed, but varied slightly from one another from time to time and place to place. These differences involved slight variations in size, color, or some other characteristic. Darwin wondered why such variations existed. Darwin also knew that he needed a driving mechanism to explain these changes.

Then it occurred to him. If a different characteristic provided an advantage for survival, then that organism will survive and pass on its favored characteristic to its offspring. In England, pigeon breeders were already successful in their selection and control breeding. Because of this, they were able to bring about quite a variation in the pigeon stock.

This process of surviving and passing on the favored characteristic is called natural selection. This appeared to be the driving mechanism that Darwin was searching for. This simple, elegant idea made Darwin famous. Nature always favors or selects those that survive. The weak and sickly don’t last, just as those that have some disadvantage in competition for food and shelter. They die off.
If the efforts of pigeon breeders were noticeable over a short time span, what could nature accomplish over a much longer time span? Darwin imagined that if this process of small changes were allowed to go on for a long time, then possibly all the small changes might add up to really big changes between species. While Darwin recognized that some species of birds and insects were closely related, Darwin also recognized that no animal ever gave birth to an entirely different animal. Darwin concluded that change had to be slow and gradual.

Therefore, evolution by definition is simply change among organisms. Now class, at this point it would be most beneficial to consider just a few areas of study that yield significant scientific evidence in favor of evolution. In fact, there are several scientific disciplines that demonstrate evidence for evolution.

**The Miller Experiment**

In 1953, Stanley Miller set up a simple apparatus that circulated very basic and simple chemicals. Hydrogen, methane (natural gas), ammonia, and water circulated through a chamber having an electrical discharge that simulated natural lightning. After one week Miller had a complex chemical zoo. Miller was able to collect various organic molecules including amino acids, which are the constituents of proteins. And proteins are the building blocks to all life for structures and functions. Others have repeated Miller’s experiment with variations of chemicals and energy sources. This has resulted in capturing all the necessary building blocks to living systems. These include lipids, carbohydrates, and nucleotides. All this simply shows that the origin of life is simply the result of matter, energy, and time. Nothing else is needed.

**Fossil Succession**

As geologists and paleontologists dig deeper and deeper, they go through various distinct layers that are called strata. As a general rule, the lower the strata, the further back in time it represents. Consequently, the lower strata also have the simplest fossil forms, while the higher strata have the most recent fossil forms. This again is what one would expect if life has evolved over millions of years from the simple to the complex.

**Horse Evolution**

The horse fossils are also impressive from an evolutionary view. Eohippus is the oldest known precursor horse fossil. Its forefoot had four toes while the hind foot had three. Eohippus was small, about ten inches high at the shoulder, and weighted about nine pounds. Eohippus gave rise to Mesohippus. Not only was Mesohippus larger, but the forefoot of four toes had developed into three toes. Still more changes were developing. Mesohippus evolved into Protohippus. Here the forelimbs still had three toes, but the two side toes no longer touched the ground. Protohippus was also larger still. Finally
Protohippus evolved into Equus—the modern horse. Here both the forefoot and hind foot have a single toe. It’s obvious, the horse has experienced an evolutionary change over millions of years.

**Anatomical Homology**

Even though the forelimbs of the bat, porpoise, horse, and human have very different functions, the bone patterns are all very similar. This similarity is called homology and is exactly what one would expect to find if these organisms shared a common ancestor. Darwin called this observed fact “descent from a common ancestor with modification.”

**Embryology**

The German embryologist Ernst Haeckel produced drawings that showed various classes of vertebrates to be most similar at the beginning of their individual embryological development. He put forward the idea that as the individual develops before birth, the development will repeat in some sense the evolutionary development of the species. Haeckel called his Biogenetic Law, “ontogeny recapitulates phylogeny.” Ontogeny, or the development of the individual, recapitulates (repeats) the developmental phases of the main species’ group or phylogeny. In summary, *similar embryos mean evolutionary relationships*. When one looks at the early embryos of the fish, rabbit, and human; it is observed that they are quite similar, even though they look very different as adults.\(^4\)

**Four-Winged Fruit Fly**

In Darwin’s day, it was not understood how the parents’ characteristics were passed to the offspring. Because of the work of James Watson and Francis Crick, we now understand that these characteristics are encoded and passed along via the DNA—deoxyribonucleic acid molecule. This molecule is composed of four unique base nucleotides arranged in a specific sequence and thus forms a very long chain. Just as the Morse code is a sequence of dots and dashes, so DNA forms an encoding of sequential information as well. The specific pattern of every three base nucleotides specifies a specific amino acid that will later make up a link in a protein chain-like molecule. Protein molecules are the basis for all biological structures and functions. Now if at least one base nucleotide is changed for another one, the DNA molecule will have experienced a mutation. Natural radiation can do this. This means that there is a natural means to create variation in the genetic code. This variation will then find expression in new biological features and functions. The classic experimental evidence for creating new structural features is that found in the four-winged fruit fly. Natural fruit flies have only two wings, but these mutations produce four wings. Obviously, innovation structures were created.
General Comments about Evolution

We can learn a great deal about the nature of life by comparing body systems among invertebrate groups and by tracing the patterns of change as we move from one phylum (major classification group) to another. As we do so, it is important to keep this concept in mind: Evolution is random and undirected.\(^5\)

In conclusion for today’s lecture, we see that if biological variation occurs in a species, then during competition for survival, a selection for the most fit will take place in nature. Natural selection is an idea that is both simple and yet so very powerful. This means that natural selection insures that evolution is not a purely random process. Natural selection is the driving mechanism for evolution. And as we have seen from homology and fossil studies, this is the history of life on our planet. Evolution is a scientific fact of life. Evolution is no longer merely a theory.\(^6\) The theory of evolution is so broadly supported by evidence that biologists accept it with as much certainty as they do the theory of gravity.\(^7\) Some people dismiss Darwinism as ‘just a theory.’ This tactic for nullifying the evolutionary view of life has two flaws. First, it fails to separate Darwin’s two claims: that modern species evolved from ancestral forms, and that natural selection is the main mechanism for this evolution. The conclusion that life has evolved is based on historical facts – the signs of evolution discussed in the previous section.\(^8\)

Suddenly the end of the second period bell rang out. Mr. Thompson, looked up at the clock and then immediately apologized, “I’m sorry we didn’t have time for discussion or questions as I promised. We will provide opportunity for all this when we meet together again next time. You’re dismissed.”

As we step away from Mr. Thompson’s class, let’s review some other responses that have become public information.

Cold Clues on the Tip of the Godless Iceberg

Gloria Lentz testified before the U. S. Department of Education in regards to proposed regulations for the Protection of Pupil Rights Amendment. She reported that a teacher in Ohio told students, “If your parents told you there is a God and He made this world, they are lying to you.”\(^9\)

More recently, public high school teacher James Corbett in Santa Ana, California ranted during class time with over twenty statements of bias favoring irreligion over religion and communicating that creationism is “superstitious nonsense.”\(^10\)

Daniel Dennett warned parents who teach their children that man is not a product of evolution by natural selection that “those of us who have freedom of speech will feel free to describe your teachings as the spreading of falsehoods, and will attempt to demonstrate this to your children at our earliest opportunity.”\(^11\)
Atheist Dr. P.Z. Myers admitted to Ben Stein, “We’re not going to take their knitting needles away, we’re not going to take away their churches.” He believes however, that “greater science literacy” will “lead to the erosion of religion.” This is because implicit with the American method of teaching evolution, students believe that science has replaced God. An honest assessment of our sociological trends shows Myers projection is accurate. The erosion of religion [Christianity] is evident with growing anti-Christian sentiments in our society and laws. After interviewing a number of atheistic evolutionists in his documentary Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed, Ben Stein concluded, “It appears Darwinism does lead to atheism.”

Lee Strobel confirms his conversion to atheism when he first heard of Miller’s experiment in high school (See his DVD, The Case For A Creator.)

The creation-evolution legal struggle in America has a long and sporadic history. Unfortunately, this legal contest has been more sporadic than engaged because the institutional Church has remained mostly silent and non-responsive. This is due in part to the evangelical confusion on how to contest the liberal judges’ decisions. So what has been the general reaction to youth saturated with an education policy and culture of godless naturalism? Only a few private struggles have become public.

In a letter to God, Rachel Scott, the first person killed at Columbine, wrote in her diary: “I’m sorry, I’m sorry I ever doubted you. I’m sorry I didn’t trust you.” And in another letter of private devotion she wrote, “… Dear God, …why do I have to feel moments of doubt, distrust, disbelief, states of anger, & stages of loneliness when it comes to you, Father? … Why do I feel afraid?”

Vandola Stevens also testified before the U. S. Department of Education and admitted, “By Christmas of my senior year I sat down with my mother and started crying. I was severely depressed. I don’t know what I believed about myself. I didn’t know who I was or anything. Even things I was positive about earlier, I just didn’t know. I had to learn to know myself all over again. I had to learn what I believed all over again, using all the sources that the school taught me were outdated, such as my mom and dad, my pastor and my Bible. I had to learn to make decisions again, the hardest part of all, and one that now, four years later, I am still having problems with.”

General surveys of socio-trends also confirm a predominately forsaking/anti-Christian influence and tendency among the youth. The Barna Research organization along with LifeWay Research, affiliated with the Southern Baptist Convention, have noticed that a significant percentage of once active Christian youth no longer believe or practice their faith. Consider the Barna Update: Most Twenty-somethings Put Christianity on the Shelf Following Spiritual Active Teen Year. Seventy-five percent of young people that once were spiritually active during their teen years no longer attend church, read their Bibles,
or pray today.\[A\] Barna also reported that "For most adults, this pattern of disengagement is not merely a temporary phase in which they test the boundaries of independence, but is one that continues deeper into adulthood." The Southern Baptist Convention did a self-study and found that 88 percent of youth from SBC homes deny their faith before they graduate from college. Dr. Steve Henderson, president of Christian Consulting for Colleges and Ministries, Inc., projects that "at least half and possibly over two-thirds of our kids will step away from their faith while attending non-Christian colleges and universities."\[17\] The latest research by Britt Beemer of America’s Research Group however shows that most (89 percent) have begun to walk away from their faith by the time they entered college. Entering college was simply a lifestyle change that made leaving church so much easier.

Dr. David Noebel, co-author with Tim Lahaye of the book *Mind Siege*, publicly stated at the Worldview Weekend Seminar on 10/27/2001 in Colorado Springs that, “We are losing our finest Christian kids everyday to a religion. I call it Secular Fundamentalism. You want the real name for it? [He then held up a book.] *A Common Faith* by John Dewey.”\[B\] Dr. Noebel then asked, “Why are we only allowed to present this worldview to our young people in our classrooms today? The vast majority of Christians in this country don’t have the foggiest idea of what’s going on.”

Barna Research has also shown that with each successive generation, atheists and agnostics are increasing. For Builders and Seniors, 17 percent are atheists or agnostics. For Baby Boomers, 31 percent identify with these philosophies. And for Baby Busters, 51 percent are atheists and agnostics.\[18\]

Chuck Colson admitted; “In the 1960s, polls indicated that at least 65 percent of all Americans believed the Bible to be true. In the 1990s, polls indicate that only 32 percent do.”\[19\] Sociologist James Davison Hunter added, “The secularist camp (those who claim no [traditional] religious preference at all) represents the fastest growing community of ‘moral conviction’ in America.”\[20\] Evangelicals should carefully consider the reasons for this.

In Thomas Sowell’s Book, *Inside American Education, The Decline, the Deception, the Dogmas*, chapter three is titled: “Classroom Brainwashing.” and he quoted Donna Muldrew, a parent and educator to start his chapter. “Many parents wonder why they lose their children to a whole new value system.”

\[A\] Barna reported that 81% of kids in high school go to church and 61% of them leave the church in their 20s (college years). This means that 75% of church kids will turn away from Christianity. The latest research shows that middle and high school students are rejecting their faith and that college mainly provides a lifestyle change. See Dr. Randy Douglass October 21, 2009 article: “Closing the Back Door: The Need for Christian Education” http://www.normangeisler.net/need-for-christian-education.html

\[B\] John Dewey (1859-1952) was an atheist, socialist, and humanist. The NEA (National Education Association) Journal, December 1929, was dedicated to a celebration of John Dewey’s 70th birthday and awarded him a life membership in the NEA. Source: NEA, Trojan Horse in American Education, Samuel L. Blumenfeld, pg 111. Does this give you any idea who and what the NEA honors?
Mr. Thompson’s closing statement repeated an often quoted and popular idea – “evolution is random and undirected.” Did anyone demonstrate, empirically verify, or measure this undirectedness? How would he or anyone know that God was not involved at all? This is the only means that evolution could be “random and undirected.” Note carefully that such statements are not scientific statements but religious statements of belief in atheism, agnosticism or a type of deism. But do the children know this? It all seems so scientific. Yet it is simply a philosophical statement of faith in atheism. It is meant to indoctrinate children with the idea that God was not involved in creation-evolution events at all. It’s a non-traditional secular religious statement about God and all at taxpayers and students’ expense. This is state endorsement of atheism, a non-traditional religion in the belief that God does not exist. This is the secret religious agenda of the secularists. It is a secular religion.

What is also at issue here is the basic definition of science. The very popular definition of science only allows for naturalistic explanations. For many this means the total exclusion of the supernatural. This is an acceptable definition when the topic of study pertains to repeatable observable phenomena. However, when the topic is the study of origins, this definition of science is philosophically biased in favor of religious atheism. For origin issues this is both a philosophical and scientific mistake. Origin scenarios are historical and thus not subject to repeatable experimentation and investigation like phenomena in the laboratory. Origin issues are points of singularities in time.

The SETI (Search for Extraterrestrial Intelligence) program illustrates another reason why the current definition of science is limited. SETI researchers look for intelligent radio wave patterns emanating from various points in our universe. If such an intelligent radio signal should ever be discovered, it already has been concluded that such signals will have originated from an intelligent source. Should such a day of discovery come, will the researchers know whether the intelligent source is natural or supernatural? If supernatural implies the transcendence of the physical universe, then Big Bang cosmology already implies such an entity. SETI may be considered a search beyond the natural as well.

Present theories in cosmology attempt to explain what preceded the Big Bang and approach metaphysical religious-like ideas that are at present scientifically untestable and un-falsifiable. The suggestion that basic scientific facts are beginning to point to causes that transcend our physical universe is not restricted to cosmology. If one looks at the DNA molecule of even the simplest of life forms, one again sees evidence of enormous quantities of encoded information. Just as every book in any library gives testimony of a corresponding author, the DNA encoded inference for intelligence is as scientific as the SETI program’s inference for intelligence. And just as the chemistry in the ink and paper do not determine printed information, neither does the biochemistry determine the encoded information in DNA. Any combinations of letters for both the printed material and DNA “letters” (bases) are just as likely. By this means, encoded information testifies to a creative intelligence. Add the slightest element of randomness to any encoded system, and the information becomes scrambled. So how did Mr. Thompson know that evolution was random and undirected?
It is such scientific facts between intelligence and the information encoded in DNA that Antony Flew, the famous outspoken British atheist for over fifty years, has now changed his mind and believes that God does exist. (See his book: *There Is a God. How the World’s Most Notorious Atheist Changed His Mind* by Antony Flew & Roy Abraham Varghese.)

All this suggests that scientific premises and discoveries can have profound religious and metaphysical implications. These in turn affect lifestyle choices. The method and means of teaching science has even more potential to affect religious belief toward atheistic or tradition belief. The teaching of philosophical or religious ideas whereby the student is made to believe that conclusions are solely their own is more subtle manipulative than is perceived. To the undiscerning, Mr. Thompson is only teaching science. However, when one reviews the science Mr. Thompson excludes, another perception quickly develops and the question of a secret non-traditional religious agenda arises.

**Science That Is Systematically Censored**

At this point in high school biological studies, no distinction is made between large scale evolution (macroevolution) or small scale evolution (microevolution). Microevolution is a fact of life that even the most fundamental Bible-believing creationist accepts. It includes variation among birds, dogs, insects, and other animals. However, the scientific evidence for macroevolution is not as firmly established even among scientists.\[C\] But for public school students this distinction has been blurred. It’s assumed that a change at one level (finch beak shape and size variation) is equivalent to changes on a large scale (the origin of finches) and that the large scale change is simply the accumulation of many small scale changes. The mechanism responsible for color change and adaptation of a biological feature has never been shown to be sufficient for major body changes that require coordinated and simultaneous changes of various tissues and organs to insure continuous advantageous functionality. Many transitions require multiple favorable changes. Such would be required in going from a rat-like creature to a bat. So how could

---

\[C\] G.A. Kerkut, physiologist and biochemist admitted, “...I think that the attempt to explain all living forms in terms of an evolution from a unique source, though a brave and valid attempt, is one that is premature and not satisfactorily supported by present-day evidence."\[21\]

“The German zoologist, Bernhard Rensch, was able to provide a long list of leading authorities who have been inclined to the view that macroevolution cannot be explained in terms of microevolutionary processes, or any other currently known mechanisms. These dissenters cannot be dismissed as cranks, creationists, or vitalists, for among their ranks are many first rate biologists. This is acknowledged by Mayr [A famous evolutionist].”\[22\]

“A raft of evolutionary biologists examining whole organisms wonder just how Darwinism can account for their observations. The English biologist Mae-Wan Ho and Peter Saunders complain as follows: ‘It is now approximately half a century since the neo-Darwinian synthesis was formulated. A great deal of research has been carried on within the paradigm it defines. Yet the successes of the theory are limited to the minutiae of evolution, such as the adaptive change in coloration of moths; while it has remarkable little to say on the questions which interest us most, such as how there came to be moths in the first place.’ “\[23\]
a rat-like creature develop longer forelimbs and fingers and this not become a drag and an impediment for survival just prior to the pre-bat’s ability to fly? No such transitions are presented in textbooks because some transitional links are just too hard to even imagine offering a survival advantage and Darwin agreed.

*It is no doubt extremely difficult even to conjecture by what gradations many structures have been perfected…* Charles Darwin

**Miller Experiment Questioned**

Miller’s experiment is famous because amino acids, the building blocks of proteins necessary for all living structures, were synthesized for the first time in the laboratory from what was once believed to be pre-life atmospheric conditions. But before one can do this, it’s very important that oxygen be excluded from Miller’s experiment for two reasons: 1) In the presence of the electrical spark, oxygen will cause an explosion with either the hydrogen or the methane (natural gas) and 2) Oxygen also oxidizes any organic compounds formed and yields them ineffective for further organic synthesis for biomolecules and metabolic action. Oxygen is important for biological respiration, but not for biological synthesis. Synthesis is what is needed when one is trying to build up a biological system.

At this point it is important to realize that there are natural means for oxygen to accumulate on the prebiotic earth. Ultraviolet rays from the sunlight in the upper atmosphere causes water molecules to break up into hydrogen and oxygen molecules by a processed called photodissociation. Geologists have reported that from the time of the earliest dated rocks, the earth had an oxygenic atmosphere. Therefore, Miller’s experiment did not even model the atmosphere of the early earth, and if it did, Miller’s experiment would have exploded.

To describe the products of Miller’s experiment as a complex “chemical zoo” as done in Holt, Rinnehart and Winston’s textbook, *Biology Principles & Explorations*, is deceiving. The amino acids Miller created are not living entities, nor were any other biological macromolecules.

After amino acids are created, they need to be assembled into proteins. This integration does not occur naturally. It involves protein machinery already assembled and functioning. But if this could be achieved, the next step is to integrate these new proteins into functional molecular machines and structures. There are other problems. Amino acids found in living systems are of the “left handed” type. What Miller created was of the “left and right handed” types. These were randomly mixed up in Miller’s experiment. No naturalistic mechanism exists to un-mix them, just as there is no natural mechanism to un-mix left and right handed gloves in a washing machine.

Now if these could be un-mixed, then only the left handed amino acids must be collected and combined together in the right sequence to create one biologically-favored protein. If just one amino acid gets out of order in the protein chain, then bad biological things can
happen. Typical proteins involve a chain of over two hundred amino acids. There are at least twenty different amino acid possibilities for each position in a protein chain. The most primitive living system must have multiple unique proteins with hundreds of amino acid links in each protein to function. So after protein synthesis with the right sequence of amino acids, the proteins must then be integrated intelligently together to form useful structures and functioning molecular motors.

If proteins are synthesized first, then an evolutionary scenario must be developed to explain how the proteins with the “favored” amino sequences are remembered. No such evolutionary scenario exists. The biochemist Michael Behe noted, “If you search the scientific literature on evolution, and if you focus your search on the question of how molecular machines – the basis of life – developed, you find an eerie and complete silence.” We, therefore, have a very long way to go before the creation of the simplistic life form is even described in theoretical concepts and idealized chemical models. This must be done first before it can be experimentally verified. As it stands, we don’t have a naturalistic clue, so maybe it didn’t happen. Evolution at the most basic theoretical level falters.

Darwinian natural selection presupposes two basic functions: 1) reproduction and 2) a memory (DNA) type molecule to record the favored characteristics. If an organism acquired a favorable characteristic which enabled it to survive, it would mean nothing if that organism was unable to transmit that favorable characteristic to its offspring. This implies that natural selection presupposes a reproducing system and an encoded memory (DNA) of the favored characteristic. In spontaneous generation or abiogenesis (the origin of life), an evolutionary scenario is needed to explain how the first reproducing protein machines were developed without natural selection to drive it. This is because abiogenesis must create the first reproducing memory mechanism. Without a memory reproduction system, one cannot speak in terms of natural selection. Without natural selection, there is no other known naturalistic driving mechanism for evolution during abiogenesis. In naturalistic terms, one is left with random processes alone in describing the origin of the very first life forms from organic chemicals.

It is a known chemical fact that both amino acids that make up proteins and the base nucleotides that make up DNA can be chemically combined in any sequential order. Looking to the chemistry to determine these sequences is as meaningful as looking to the chemistry of ink and paper in determining the sequence of letters on a page. All combinations are just as probable from the chemistry. There exist no special chemical affinities to define the information rich sequence patterns encoded in DNA or protein molecules found in living systems.

Therefore, it is not scientifically accurate to describe beginning of life scenarios via a natural selection process without having a genetic reproducing system in place first. Now go and build this complex genetic reproducing system randomly because it must be in place before natural selection can function.

All this suggests that beside matter and energy, one more factor must be included before
a meaningful origin of life scenario is developed. That factor is the inclusion of information encoded in the DNA molecule. Because DNA is so ubiquitous in all of living systems, such information must be accounted for. The quantity of information found even in the most simplistic life forms is enormous.

**Fossil Succession Questioned**

Per the Darwinian framework, a single living entity or a few living entities came into being initially. Darwin never explained how, he just assumed such was the case. From these all life has evolved. This means that in the beginning only a few life forms existed and these in turn very slowly evolved into the many different life forms today. The major animal and plant differences with unique, distinct body plans are classified into the highest levels of taxonomy called phyla. According to evolutionary theory, the very first life forms would be very similar, while the much later life forms would be very different. However, the fossil evidence shows a very different response. A massive explosion of many different phyla existed from the very beginning. This is known as the Cambrian explosion. How did so many animals become so very different right from the beginning if slow evolution is the only means for their origin?

The fossil record is a pattern of abrupt appearance followed by no change or stasis. Since Darwin envisioned evolution as a very slow process, Darwin realized that innumerable transitional links should have been formed between all the major phyla classifications. Darwin correctly reasoned that many more transitional links would have existed between the phyla than between various closely related species. Statistically, there should be many more fossils between phyla than between the closely related species. Yet fossil links for closely related species are found while the fossil links between major classifications (phyla) are not found. Because small and soft-body fossils have been discovered, one cannot rely on the idea that the links were always destroyed. The missing links between various phyla are a major anomaly if slow evolution is in fact true.

It is a curious oddity that between various species that are closely related we have transitional links, while between large major animal classification groupings, that should have an infinitude of connecting links in Darwin’s words, we have no transitional links. Niles Eldredge admitted with Stephen Jay Gould that “We paleontologists have said that the history of life supports that interpretation [of gradual adaptive change] all the while really knowing that it does not.”

If we can find multiple fossils of variations between closely related species, then we should find even more fossils between the larger variations of the major groups known as phyla. G. G. Simpson, a leading evolutionary paleontologist, testified to the reality of the gaps in the fossil record. “Gaps among known species, are sporadic and often small. Gaps among known orders, classes, and phyla are systematic and almost always large.”

This is opposite to what one would expect to find in the fossil record if macroevolution had operated over long periods of time producing an infinitude of transitional links between the orders, classes, and phyla. The very slow process of evolution would have
produced many more transitional links between the major groups than between the closely related species. Yet this is not found in the field. What is interpreted as fossil succession in the various strata may even be a partial function of ecological niches that such organisms once favored.

**Horse Evolution Maybe**

Eohippus is almost identical to the African Hyrax. Both are about the same size of a rabbit and have four front toes and three rear toes. Some present-day Shire horses are known to have more than one toe per foot but are still considered fully horses. Eighteen-inch-tall American Miniature Yearling Stallion exists today. Horses vary from this size to seven feet high. All are fully horses.27

Another concept to keep in mind is the degree of evolution possible. It is one thing to change toe number and overall body size (microevolution). It is quite a different challenge to attempt to change the overall body type (macroevolutionary change) that leads to different phyla classifications via small steps into another. It is assumed that evidence for one type of change demonstrates evidence for all types of changes. It is possible that the horse evolved in some manner, yet the basic body plan has remained unchanged.

What happens if an intermediate transitional organ involves multiple simultaneous changes before it is fully functional or advantageous? And what happens when multiple organ systems must change in concert to produce the next favorable transition animal? The result is the failure to even imagine what a favorable intermediate transition might look like. And this is the case for many needed transitions. The problem is so challenging that hypothetical transitional forms are not even imagined or proposed in some cases. (Can you imagine what the transition would have been between a rat-type and a bat? As the rat-type’s fingers grow longer, but before they are capable of flight, the longer fingers must not be a disadvantage or drag for the rat-bat intermediate. Otherwise natural selection would eliminate it or select against it.) The more such multiple changes (muscles along with bones, etc.) are required to occur simultaneously before the transition is “advantageous,” the closer such a transition models a miracle or one animal type giving birth to an entirely different type.

Remember, natural selection will not wait around for a sequence series of transitions to accumulate before such is deemed “good.” Such nonfunctioning/disadvantageous intermediates will be considered freaks and thus dead weight for survival. They will be eliminated via the competitive pressures of natural selection immediately.

Evolution by random mutations and natural selection is basically a problem solving technique by trial and error. If such a process is occurred, it would have produced not simply a single linear transitional line, but a multi-branching bush of related descendents. For microevolution between species that are closely related, there are examples of this. For macroevolution, there should statistically be many more fossil bush branches between major classifications. Instead, the fossil record is strangely silent on this too.
Life has always had the appearance of design. Now as more discoveries are made of the basic unit of life—the cell, this problem becomes even more severe. Biochemists are beginning to define and model the cell in terms of a nanotechnology factory with molecular machines. Each machine with multiple protein parts must be fully integrated and functioning before there is any selective advantage for natural selection to act upon. The more parts that must be fully integrated before there is functionality, the farther we move away from Darwin’s original hypothesis that each transitional form requires only a slight, small (single) advantageous modification. Many such hypothetical piecemeal transitions do not appear to have ever existed. (The fossil record seems to confirm this as well. Links are missing between the major phyla.) The more we learn about living systems, the more life looks designed.

Anatomical Homology Questioned

The surprising discoveries related to homology have been that non-homologous genes and non-homologous embryological pathways of development are involved in the development of homologous structures. An evolutionary scenario of small-step changes would not have projected that homologous structures were the results of non-homologous genes and completely different developmental pathways. If homologous structures are truly the evidence of descent with modification from ancestor parents, then why are such structures not produced by homologous genes and why invent totally new embryological pathways of development for such similar structures? This is not what piecemeal, slight evolutionary change steps would have predicted.

Embryology as Evidence Questioned

Ernst Haeckel’s embryo drawings have been popularly incorporated into many biology textbooks even today. While Jonathan Wells was finishing his Ph.D in cell and developmental biology at the University of California, Berkeley, he knew Haeckel’s embryo drawings were in error. Then confirmation came in 1977 when British embryologist Michael Richardson and his colleagues published an article in the journal Anatomy and Embryology that compared the textbook drawings with actual embryos. Richardson was subsequently quoted in the leading American Journal Science as saying: “It looks like it’s turning out to be one of the most famous fakes in biology.”

Contrary to Haeckel’s Biogenetic Law, embryos did not always look similar to each other the further back or earlier in time one studies their development. Despite such errors Haeckel’s embryo drawings continue to be printed in the textbooks today. Consequently Haeckel’s Biogenetic Law, “ontogeny recapitulates phylogeny,” is in question. Should students learn real science?

Four-Winged Fruit Fly Questioned

To produce four-winged fruit flies, skilled researchers must carefully control the process through three generations from one non-functional stage after another. In the wild,
natural selection would have eliminated any non-functional stage. After the third mutation, then the four-winged fly is produced. These mutated wings do not work and the flies have lost their ability to fly. But more importantly, it must be noted that these extra wings are not exactly new innovative structures, but changes to structures that already exist. The original structures are called balancers or halteres.

“Major mutations can fundamentally alter an animal’s anatomy and structure, but these mutations are always harmful or outright lethal. Either way, as University of Georgia geneticist John McDonald has pointed out, the kind of mutation that natural selection requires – namely, large-scale, beneficial mutation – does not occur.”

**Mistaken Science**

It is popular to compare the “theory of evolution” with the “theory of gravity,” just at the Holt biology text has done. By doing this, evolution is elevated to the same level of fact as that of gravity. This is an error. Gravity is not a theory. Gravity is a law. Evolution is a theory because of the many problems that still need to be resolved.

**In Conclusion**

Hiding scientific problems hampers solutions. In any other scientific endeavor or study, questions and puzzles are widely published to motivate research and encourage solutions even with students. However, the censorship of evolutionary problems is universal in all American textbooks and classroom presentations. It is a very rare event for students to learn of any evolutionary problem, even though Charles Darwin admitted there are problems. Mr. Thompson’s class is not an isolated incident. This pattern of selective scientific censorship is consistent throughout American education and is bad science. If the objective is science education, then why is any science censored at all? The consistent pattern of the excluded science suggests a favoring of the non-neutral religious and philosophical bias of atheistic materialism. When one carefully looks at what is being censored, the pattern favors indoctrination in atheism or a compromise toward agnosticism. This is clearly a government endorsement of a non-traditional religious belief. This policy imposes a secular religious belief on children and young people. When it is finally understood that a state sponsored secular religion has been favored, will there be any voices of protest because the majority is now its adherents? Should we be surprised that seeds of a secular atheistic/agnostic education are the foundation of a secular society with deranged socialistic political aspirations and decadent lifestyles? To compound this problem, organizations like the Natural Center for Science Education exist to remove teachers from classrooms that attempt to tell children of secular scientists that

are finding problems with evolutionary theory. Should the Church remain uninvolved, when atheists and agnostics drive the politics of VOID into public schools? Where is the evangelical commitment to match their drive for influence? Should evangelicals wonder why our society is becoming so religiously atheistic when the politics of forced atheism/agnosticism on children isn’t even a public prayer request in many denominations?

Mary Midgley was formerly the Senior Lecturer in Philosophy at the University of Newcastle. As a secular writer, many people will be surprised by her book’s title: *Evolution as a Religion – Strange Hope and Strange Fears*. Her book has been described as “not in any way an attack on science.” Rather it’s reported that she is writing against what she perceives to be a serious threat to real science. A book reviewer gives a hint to her significant point about evolution—*A distortion which can lead to its becoming discredited, just as western religion has, by becoming associated with arrogant and unjustified claims which form no proper part of it.* It is this atheistic-religious bias toward distortions that resists publishing scientific problems in evolution. It is time the American people see that atheistic religious faith is alive and well in our schools and not all scientific facts are taught as a result. The liberal secular media is not likely to publish this. The Church is the only entity that could protest the present distortions in education.

Michael Ruse, professor of history and philosophy and author of *The Darwinian Revolution* (1979), *Darwinism Defended* (1982), and *Taking Darwin Seriously* (1986) admitted: “Evolution is promoted by its practitioners as more than mere science. Evolution is promulgated as an ideology, a secular religion – a full-fledged alternative to Christianity, with meaning and morality. I am an ardent evolutionist and an ex-Christian, but I must admit in this one complaint…the literalists [i.e., creationists] are absolutely right. Evolution is a religion. This was true of evolution in the beginning, and it is true of evolution still today.”\(^3\)\(^1\) (The bracketed item is from Michael Ruse too.)

Lynn Margulis is Distinguished University Professor of Biology at the University of Massachusetts.\(^3\)\(^2\) Michael Behe reported that “Lynn says that history will ultimately judge neo-Darwinism as ‘a minor twentieth-century religious sect within the sprawling religious persuasion of Anglo-Saxon biology.’”\(^3\)\(^3\)

One can only hope that Lynn’s projection is correct. Statistics suggest otherwise. “In a 1998 survey, nearly 95% of biologists in the National Academy of Science identified themselves as atheists or agnostics. Similarly, in a 2003 survey of leading evolutionists, 87% denied the existence of God and 88% disbelieve in life after death.”\(^3\)\(^4\) (Please be careful interpreting that the atheistic element from 1998 to 2003 has diminished. One cannot determine this from these statistics alone because there were no differentiations made between atheists and agnostics in the first statistic. Please also keep in mind that agnosticism could include New Age spirituality. Such are open to a belief in life after death.)
Behe says that Lynn is a popular speaker and has publicly asked the molecular biologists to name a single, unambiguous example of the formation of a new species by the accumulation of mutations. Behe reports that her challenge goes unmet.\(^3\)

The agnostic and Senior Research Fellow in the Department of Biochemistry at the University of Otago in New Zealand, Dr. Michael Denton, admitted that "...the decline in religious belief can probably be attributed more to the propagation and advocacy by the intellectual and scientific community of the Darwinian version of evolution than to any other single factor."\(^3\)\(^6\)\(^E\)

Dr. Colin Patterson, paleontologist of the British Museum of Natural History, once had a brief custom of asking his scientific audience the question: “Can you tell me anything you know about evolution, any one thing that is true?” He said that he tried that question on the geology staff at the Field Museum of Natural History and only got silence. He tried it on the Evolutionary Morphology Seminar in the University of Chicago, a prestigious body of evolutionists, and all he got there ‘was silence for a long time and eventually one person said, “I do know one thing – It ought not to be taught in high school.”\(^3\)\(^8\) (Did evangelicals ever hear this prophetic voice and expert on evolution? And if they did, would it be enough to wake them up and push for the teaching of all the science on this subject in their atheistic politically driven public schools? Did you ever wonder how the secular media responds to scientists that question the teaching of evolution in our schools? No need to wonder. These scientists are censored.)

However, don’t expect Drs. Marguis or Patterson to be speaking at any child’s government school soon. One would hope that as parents learn of scientific censorship on origin studies, they would then petition their school and political authorities for full academic freedom that would demand full critical thinking on all the scientific data. A fundamental winnable strategy on public education policy is simply to teach all the evolutionary science. There is no need for a political battle over introducing “creation science.” Presenting the problems in evolution is sufficient. But don’t be deceived, there are significant political forces in place to oppose even this. To win even this right will not be a political cakewalk. We will see in the next chapter that there is growing political pressure with zero tolerance for any change in the way science is currently taught in America’s public schools. Why is this? The other side knows their numbers are growing because America’s youth are becoming atheistic and agnostic. All this has political and social ramifications. The most organized and well funded seek to eliminate anything that could cause a child to doubt macroevolution because macroevolution is the seed to

\(^E\) A Progressive Secular Revival: It is absolutely phenomenal when one considers how the prevailing ethos of western civilization changed from theism to atheistic secularism so quickly. Dr. Michael Denton admitted; “It is extraordinary to think that a little over one hundred years ago the majority of biologists and geologists felt completely at ease intellectually with a view of the past which necessitated innumerable miraculous or supernatural events.”\(^3\)\(^7\) This is just one social indication of the profound changes in a cultural ethos that has occurred as a result of a public education policy in atheistic apologetics. In the last 100 years the majority has been converted to secularism via naturalistic evolution. Yet hundreds of Ph.D. scientists today have expressed scientific skepticism of neo-Darwinian evolution (See http://www.dissentfromDarwin.org). These scientists are the minority today mainly because evolutionary problems are not widely published and it is difficult to do so. See *Expelled* DVD in resources.
causing children to doubt God and traditional beliefs. The current policy of science education is determined by a group of very politically active secularists (atheists and agnostics) and inactive evangelicals ignorant of means to oppose them. It is a serious mistake to believe that the politics is driven by scientific concerns alone. If only science education was the driving concern, then all the science would be taught. The religion of atheistic and agnostic humanism is alive and well in our government schools. This is the secret religious agenda in government education while evangelicals sleep on their opportunities.

One reviewer of my book wondered if I was communicating the idea that God was judging America because of our failure on school choice public policies. My response: God does judge, but God’s judgment is not the subject of this chapter. Our society’s slide into decadence is not due to God’s judgment, but because of our failure to implement school choice with schools available to give the evidence for God, as well as our failure to enforce the teaching of all the science surrounding origin issues. If people believe God doesn’t exist, they will live like it. This is our fault, not God’s. This chapter shows our guilt of permitting the secularists to evangelize America’s youth in atheism in our “public” schools.

We will look next into the secular religious fervor so publically expressed and politically driven that favors forcing its philosophy on public school children. There are other nonpolitical options to consider as well. Before we go on, we should now be able to answer our first fundamental question:

**QUESTION:** What is the foundational basis for our secular society?

**ANSWER:** While many Americans naively believe public schools operate per Separation of Church and State[F] with a neutral policy toward religion, children are indoctrinated with atheistic and agnostic philosophies via “scientific evidence” for materialistic naturalism. Non-traditional religion is present in our public schools. Materialistic naturalism preaches that an undirected process in nature and not God is the reason for all life. The naturalist preaches this despite the fact an undirected working model has never been observed or scientifically demonstrated to bring about many of the necessary macro-evolutionary changes. This philosophy is as religious as any other because it requires faith to believe that life, in all its intricate, sophisticated, and complicated forms has evolved despite all the scientific problems that must be overcome. Hide the scientific problems from the children and they will believe that natural selection

[F] The phrase “Separation of Church and State” is not in our Constitution, neither does the Constitution express a policy against public religious expression. If this was the intention, then the U.S. Constitution originators would have never permitted the public Christian expression that uncensored history so clearly testifies. Because of our Founding Father’s Christian intentions we still have a paid Christian Chaplin in the Senate today. History testifies that without this clear Christian intention, our Constitution may not have been written at all. The delegates were divided and on the verge of leaving without a Constitution. The Convention experienced a turning point when Benjamin Franklin proposed that each session start with Christian prayer. Why may senators pray, but the children are forbidden? An unbiased history will show that while our Founding Fathers did not want one denomination to be favored by the government, they still favored the Christian religion to be in our government and schools. See Northwest Ordinance, Article III.
explains everything. Materialistic naturalism is therefore a faith-based exercise because not only has much not been demonstrated, much has not even been explained in theoretical models of viable transitional links. Even Darwin admitted, “It is no doubt difficult even to conjecture by what gradations many structures have been perfected.”

(What are the transitional links between invertebrates to vertebrates? What are the transitions leading up to the flying insects, birds, and bats?) This is not science, because the scientific method also demands repeatable tests and observations. This is not a scientific education, because significant science is censored. The children are never told of the scientific problems or of the silently accepted assumptions in the General Theory of Evolution. (See the evolutionist, Dr. Kerkut’s book, Implications of Evolution.) These children become adults that naively believe macroevolution, as taught in our government schools, is an uncontested scientific fact. In fact, many have been told by a teacher that evolution is a fact. While microevolution (small scale change) is a fact, macroevolution (large scale change) is far from established scientific fact status. Many children therefore become adults with atheistic and agnostic philosophies and mistaken notions that their philosophy is based on science alone. Robert Bork sees the intellectual classes as “highly influential and tend to view [traditional] religion as primitive superstition” and adds, “They believe that science has left atheism as the only respectable intellectual stance.”

The critical issue is that a foundation for an atheistic/agnostic worldview has been established in the minds of millions of people. A worldview or mindset is simply a set of filters a person uses to validate subsequent information. If subsequent information does not line up with a person’s preconceived worldview, the typical reaction is to reject such subsequent information as false and cling to the worldview. Worldviews are, therefore, foundational. James W. Sire, author of Why Good Arguments Often Fail, says that evolution is one of the five most frequently raised objections to the Christian understanding of reality. (You will have to read his book to get the other objections.) Christian evangelism has just become much more difficult because society has become more secular. This explains in part our ineffectiveness in evangelism. This is because the Christian God of all creation has been framed to be unnecessary and unrealistic via the pseudo scientific evidence for materialistic naturalism. The theistic evolutionist will counter, “Evolution does not necessarily lead to atheism.” Logically, this is true. However, social trends suggest otherwise. This government indoctrination does lead to questioning the historical reliability of the Scriptures. This in turn leads to questions of authenticity, inerrancy, and biblical validity. Questions that should be raised and addressed, but seldom are. All this is sufficient for the aggressive secular evangelist. Unfortunately, once a popular notion is established as a scientific “fact,” even by pseudo or censored science, the questioning ends for most people and a new secular faith begins. The state has now established and favored the religions of belief-of-no-God (atheism) and no-can-know (agnosticism).

This idea of God being unnecessary will also begin to have a detrimental effect on theistic evolutionists as well. Robert Bork noticed the same trend in Frederick Lewis Allen’s quote, “[R]eligion is declining because those identified with it do not actually believe it.” In Pauline terms, students have been taken captive in their minds (2 Timothy 2:26, Colossians 2:8). Now add to this atheistic bias the evangelical bias that the process of salvation is the work of the Holy Spirit alone and that all we are required to
do is just present the simple gospel message of Jesus Christ. Here evangelicals have also been taken captive by Satan. If salvation is the work of the Holy Spirit alone, why are we commanded by the Holy Spirit to study and have answers (2 Timothy 2:15, 1 Peter 3:15)? Could this study include both God’s general and specific revelations? These two biases – the secularist’s bias in macroevolution and the evangelical’s bias in limited evangelism are the primary reasons for our ineffectiveness in reaching our world for Christ.

_In our day, we must first establish the existence of God. Only then can we present the evidence that Jesus is God incarnate._ Ravi Zacharias in _Jesus among Other Gods_.

Dr. Henry M. Morris concurs. “Men and women must first be brought back to a recognition of their Creator before they can comprehend the meaning of sin against him and salvation by him.”

Pete Greig also sees similar evangelical mistakes by the converts of the Welsh awakening which began in 1904. “[They were] defeated by another enemy in the intellectual battles with secular humanism and liberalism. Such philosophies had been developing since the Enlightenment championed by Darwin, Freud and Marx and the passionate Welsh converts found themselves theologically unarmed for combat. For all the wonders of those revival years it remains a tragedy that there was insufficient theological and intellectual depth to adequately equip the young church for the future. Here then once again, we see a deficiency that could only really have been addressed in the years of propagation and prayer that preceded [the Welsh] revival.”

Note carefully that the Welsh deficiency resulted from their disobedience to 2 Timothy 2:15 and 1 Peter 3:15. They failed to study.

In a paper titled: “Teenagers’ Beliefs Moving Farther From Biblical Perspectives,” October 23, 2000 (page 3, 4) the Barna Research Group stated, “The unintentional yet constant reinforcement of their inappropriate beliefs by people and institutions they trust is making the job tougher and tougher for the Church. If biblical truth is going to prevail in American society, it will require a strategic, long-term, coordinated effort to convey God’s truth in ways that shake young people from their theological complacency and arrogance. Churches and individual believers cannot continue to minister in the same ways they have been doing for the past decade… to overcome the spiritual distortions so common in our society requires a more comprehensive and long-term solution.”

In an anti-intellectual context, as many evangelicals operate, it’s easy to blame all rebellion against God in terms of love for sinful lifestyles. Dr. Francis Schaeffer argued against this. “It is not true that every intellectual question is a moral dodge.”

However, as increasing numbers of people live as though God does not exist, they indulge in sinful pleasures. Their godless ways of living become a distraction and temptation to others. When sinful lifestyles become popular, the love for God also diminishes as Jesus said would happen.
Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold.

Jesus the Christ – Matthew 24:12 (NIV)

A common misunderstanding however is to think that sinful lifestyles are the primary cause for decadence. This is not always true. Sinful lifestyles define decadence. While decadence breeds decadence, the desire for decadent pleasures is only a secondary cause for decadence. We must still ask, what unlocked the prohibition against decadence and thus enabled people to put such desires into lifestyle action? What caused the initial slide toward decadence in the first place? Could it be that inhibitions vanish when it’s believed an eternal Judge does not exist? One could also ask the seeker-sensitive Church... Do inhibitions vanish when it’s believed the Judge is only loving and gracious? Paul and Jude argued against this problem that also arose in the first Church (Romans 6:1-2, Jude 1:3-4).[6]

The critical issue is that a foundational worldview of atheistic/agnostic thought is being established in the minds of millions of American children while the Church remains silent in its saturated out-of-balance view of God of only love and grace. The indoctrination of VOID has been in process for decades with no to minimum response from the majority of evangelical leaders and all at taxpayers’ expense. We should not be surprised then to find so many people living for their own agendas, personal standards, and worldly pleasures as though God is irrelevant or doesn’t exist at all. Carnal evangelicals are also blinded by their view of an idol non-judging god. They cannot see how their god of only grace will judge their apathy and disobedience.

Tim LaHaye and David Noebel agree: Today our country is faced with the most cruel enemy it has ever confronted, the religious forces of Secular Humanism. Ministers of the gospel and their constituencies make up the only group in this country with sufficient followers to vote the rascals out of office and to reform the courts, media, entertainment, and education. If pastors hide behind false excuses such as, ‘I don’t want to become controversial’ or ‘I just preach the gospel, brother’ ...we will lose all our freedoms ...to... the obsession of secularists.[48]

In summary, the foundation of our secular society is therefore the “scientific evidence” for godlessness via materialistic naturalism. Secularism, like Christianity, attempts to answer the big questions in life: Where did we come from? Why are we here? Where are we going? How shall we live? However, secularism answers these questions via the

---

[6] Robert H. Bork also noticed that “It is not helpful that the ideas of salvation and damnation, of sin and virtue, which once played major roles in Christian belief, are now almost never heard of in the mainline churches. The sermons and homilies are now almost exclusively about love, kindness, and eternal life. That may be regarded, particularly by the sentimental, as an improvement in humaneness, indeed in civility, but it also means an alteration in the teaching of Christianity that makes the religion less powerful as a moral force.”[47]
godless humanistic philosophy of VOID. It offers no significant meaning or purpose in life. If secularists were tolerant, then all religious ideas and expressions would be equally permitted. If secularism were neutral, then traditional religious ideas would be embraced as much as the non-traditional. The best model of neutrality is that of a child – open to everything. Secularism is, therefore, a religious idea that is not religiously neutral. Secularism is the religion of godlessness and the belief in VOID.

The time has come for evangelicals to repent of our carnalities and then publish the fact that non-traditional religious philosophies of atheism and agnosticism are propagated as secret agendas in our public schools. It is time to publicize the science that is censored in our schools. It is time to expose how Americans are losing basic freedoms of speech and academic freedom by people with an extreme atheistic and agnostic religious philosophy. It will not stop here. They also want to censor political thought that is different from theirs. (Remember the misnamed Fairness Doctrine that would have shut down conservative radio stations?)

The Protestant Reformer Martin Luther still speaks to our generation of Christians. “If I profess with the loudest voice and clearest exposition every portion of the truth of God except precisely that little point which the world and the devil are at the moment attacking, I am not confessing Christ, however boldly I may be professing Christ. Where the battle rages, there the loyalty of the soldier is proved and to be steady on all the battle front beside, is mere flight and disgrace if he flinches at that point.”

It is time for evangelicals to resist atheism and agnosticism in our schools by all possible means. It is time to publish the benefits of school choice reforms.

“Darwin made it possible to be an intellectually fulfilled atheist.”

Zoologist - Richard Dawkins

Key Questions:
1) Despite theistic evolutionist’s claims to Christian spirituality, is it possible for such believers to recognize that a social trend toward increasing atheism and agnosticism exists among American youth due to materialistic evolutionary indoctrination in our public schools?

2) Does the Church recognize that a winnable political and legal strategy for our government schools is to teach all the evolutionary science, including the problems and not to be stuck on just promoting “Creation Science” alone?

Please do not confuse humanism with either humanitarianism or the humanities. Humanism is an atheistic/agnostic/non-theistic philosophy that holds to the idea that humanity is capable of ethical conduct without addressing supernaturalism or that matter and energy are the only realities. Humanism is a secular religion. A humanitarian is a person devoted to helping humanity. The humanities are the study of human creations - art, literature, and music. Humanism is a godless philosophy that many humanitarians do not ascribe to.
3) Over the years a few individuals and organizations have struggled against materialistic naturalism in the public square, yet the Church as a whole has been silent on public policies and scientific issues. Why has the Church avoided supporting these individuals and organizations?

4) Since secular indoctrination in public education is driven by atheists and agnostics with political and philosophical agendas (sufficient evidence will be address in chapters 3 and 10), why has the Church remained politically silent on these issues and school choice options?

5) Does the Church understand that publishing evolutionary problems will cause public doubt of macroevolution and this could be a catalyst for reversing our society’s secularization?

6) Does the Church recognize that secular thinking leads to secular public policies, liberal ideologies, and social decadence? Chapters 4, 5, and 10 show how.

7) Since the famous past atheist Antony Flew now believes that God exists because of scientific evidence in intelligent design, is the Church even awake and aware that a new day and opportunity for evangelism exists? [Robert Bork also noted the scientific shift in support of traditional faith. “Religion will no longer have to fight scientific atheism with unsupported faith. The presumption has shifted, and naturalistic atheism and secular humanism are on the defensive.”] But do evangelicals know what this means in terms of evangelistic opportunities? Are we spiritually and intellectually awake?

8) In missionary terms, does the Church recognize that skeptical secular critics are an unreached people group living among us? Christians have worked diligently to learn various cultures in our world with the hope of gaining understanding on how to most effectively reach the indigenous groups for Christ. Shouldn’t Christians also strive to understand the philosophical bias, intellectual inhibitions, and culture of the secular critic too? Wouldn’t this include origin studies? (…he that winneth souls is wise. Solomon – Proverbs 11:30b - KJV)

9) Does the Church recognize that pre-evangelistic apologetic, political, and scientific efforts must now be applied to reach many people in our secular society before traditional evangelical efforts can be sown successfully? Do we hold God’s general revelation to be as spiritual as His spiritual revelation?

10) Why is the Church silent in the public square on these foundational fundamental worldview issues that many in our culture have believed for years to be uncontested scientific facts?

11) Does the Church recognize that the challenge today is not a lack of science supporting the evidence of God’s existence, but censorship barriers both in the Church and in the public square on debating origin issues?
12) When the evidence for God grows, why are most Christians resistant to serious apologetic training? Could our lack of scientific preparation contribute to our lack of confidence to engage our secular culture? Could this also contribute to secularism growth?

13) When are Christians going to be serious enough to do anything about these problems of atheistic/agnostic indoctrination on defenseless children on a consistent continued basis?

14) Since most evangelicals are apathetic toward children that are being taken captive by atheistic/agnostic teachers (Colossians 2:8, 2 Timothy 2:26), is this apathy any less evil or different than the apathy many “Christians” had toward the plight of the suffering Jews in Nazi-occupied Europe or of American slaves? This evangelical apathy has the potential of soul damning eternal consequences and the judgment of God.

15) Could Americans be under the judgment of God now because of these evangelical apathies?

16) Is it even possible to have God’s blessings while resistant to God’s desires?

17) How can we claim to be free Americans when basic academic freedom doesn’t exist for the teaching of all sciences surrounding origin issues? Instead, atheism is forced on the children without any choice via disguised materialistic science. Why do we allow this?

18) Since atheism is the belief that God doesn’t exist and agnosticism the belief one cannot know God, both non-traditional religions, why do we allow the state to establish or favor these secular philosophies/religions on children?

19) Why do we believe that traditional beliefs are the only possible religions or belief systems and why do we even think schools can be philosophical or religious free zone at all?

**Why Evangelicals Are Guilty:**

The wise king Solomon said, “The first to present his case seems right, till another comes forward and questions him” (Proverbs 18:17 NIV). Atheists and agnostics have been the first and most aggressive to present their atheistic-style censored science on American children for decades without serious resistance or questions from us, the evangelicals. If no one comes forward with an opposing view, we too tend to accept the first story we hear. So what would define and govern our lifestyles if we thought God didn’t exist? America’s intellectual elites are no different. Consequently, as Solomon projected, our silence has contributed significantly to American atheism and agnosticism. This is the foundation of our godless decadent society. Evangelicals that believe sin’s popularity is the main obstacle in evangelism will never see anything preceding this. Does the Church
really understand that uncontested evolutionary indoctrination is the reason many people question the validity of God and the authenticity of the Bible today? Destroying this foundation has all sorts of personal lifestyle, social, legal, and political decadent ramifications.

“When the foundations are being destroyed, what can the righteous do?”
Psalm 11:3 (NIV)

What could Bill and Irene do?

1) Pray that a passion grows among God’s people for spreading the scientific evidence for God. There is no need to become research scientists. Bill and Irene could simply purchase bulk quantities of “Unlocking The Mystery of Life” DVD from www.Go2RPI.com to loan or give away. Priced at $2.39 each and less for quantities starting at 100. Please check out the other DVDs in the resources mentioned below. Surprising discounts for single quantities are also available.

2) Become knowledgeable enough to refer seekers and skeptics to helpful websites, DVDs, and books. My favorite book to recommend to secular atheistic/agnostic believers is the agnostic and senior research biochemist, Michael Denton’s book: Evolution: A Theory in Crisis. I like mentioning the title last and watching their shocked faces.

3) Encourage their church and Christian/private schools to include a serious apologetic curriculum or send youth to an apologetic training camp. See organizations below.

4) Encourage their church to join with other churches in their community to give away scientific apologetic books and DVDs together with school supplies to needy public school students and families prior to each school year.

5) Give on a continuous basis to an apologetic organization as a local missionary activity.

6) Help publicize the fact that religious humanism is in our public schools. It is characterized by its censorship of selective scientific facts on origin studies that mitigate against atheism. (Share and distribute Ben Stein’s documentary, Expelled- No Intelligence Allowed and Discovery Institute’s DVD – Icons of Evolution.)

7) Begin to become knowledgeable on the various school choice proposals. (See Resources at the end of Chapter 9.)

8) Encourage others to sign the Academic Freedom Petition below.

Please sign the Academic Freedom Petition and encourage others to do the same:

http://www.academicfreedompetition.com/

Suggested Scripture Reading:
Genesis s 1 and 2.
Resources:

**DVDs:**
1) Unlocking The Mystery Of Life
2) The Privileged Planet
3) Darwin’s Dilemma
4) Darwin’s Heretic
5) The Case For A Creator – A Journalist Investigates Scientific Evidence that points Toward God. The Film with Lee Strobel.
   Source: www.discovery.org for the above DVDs.
6) The Grand Experiment, Source: www.TheGrandExperiment.com
8) Is the Bible Reliable? Source: www.focusonthefamily.com

**Article:** “We are Losing Our Children” by T.C. Pinckney, Brig. General USAF (ret)
Source: http://www.exodusmandate.org/art_we_loosing_our_children.htm

**Books:**

**Problems with Evolution:**
1) *Explore Evolution*, Stephen C. Meyer, Scott Minnich, Jonathan Moneymaker, Paul Nelson, & Ralph Seelke. (www.exploreevolution.com) (Reading level: high school) **This is the only book with evidence for and against evolution.**

2) *Icons of Evolution, Science or Myth?*, Jonathan Wells
   - Why much of what we teach about evolution is wrong,
   Regnery Publishing, Inc. (Reading level: high school)

3) *Icons of Evolution – A Student Study Guide*, Roger Dehart
   ColdWater Media P.O. Box 470, 300 General Palmer Dr., Palmer Lake, CO 80133. (www.coldwatermedia.com)
   This is a very concise readable 24 page booklet covering 7 main evolutionary controversies.

4) *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis*, Michael Denton
   Published by: Adler & Adler
   **Dr. Denton, an agnostic Senior Research Fellow in the biochemistry department at the University of Otega in New Zealand, shows multiple scientific problems in evolution.** (Reading level: Graduate/Upper Division)

5) *Implications of Evolution*, G. A. Kerkut
   Published by: Pergamon Press
   **This rare old book from an evolutionist freely admits evolutionary problems.**
   (Reading level: Graduate/Upper Division)
6) *Vertebrate History: Problems in Evolution*, Barbara J. Stahl
   Published by: McGraw-Hill Book Company
   **This is a secular text book.** (Reading level: Graduate/Upper Division)

   Discovery Institute Press, Seattle

8) *Bones of Contention*, Roger Lewin
   - Controversies in the Search for Human Origins
   Simon and Schuster, New York

9) Evolution: The Grand Experiment Vol. 1, Dr. Carl Werner
   www.TheGrandExperiment.com
   New Leaf Press, PO Box 726, Green Forest, AR 72638, www.newleafpress.net

**Problems with Evolution + Evidence for Intelligent Design:**

1) *The Design of Life – Discovering Signs of Intelligence in Biological Systems*,
   William A. Dembski, Jonathan Wells,
   Foundation for Thought and Ethics, Dallas, 75248
   (Reading level: high school)

2) *DEFEATING DARWINISM by Opening Minds*, Phillip E. Johnson
   - An Easy-To-Understand Guide
   InterVarsity Press, Downers Grove, Illinois   (Reading level: high school)

**Evidence for Intelligent Design:**

1) *Darwin's Black Box, the Biochemical Challenge to Evolution*, Michael J. Behe
   Published by: Simon & Schuster

2) *The Design Inference*, William A. Dembski
   Cambridge University Press

3) *By Design or by Chance?*, Denyse O’Leary
   Published by: Castle Quay Books, Canada

4) *The Privileged Planet*, Guillermo and Jay W. Richards
   (Book and DVD have the same title.)
   Regnery Publishing, Inc.

5) *Science and Evidence for Design in the Universe*,
   Michael J. Behe, William A. Dembski, Stephen C. Meyer
   Ignatius Press, San Francisco

6) *The Design Revolution*, William A. Dembski
- Answering the Toughest Questions about Intelligent Design, InterVarsity Press

7) *signs of INTELLIGENCE* - understanding intelligent design, Edited by William A. Dembski & James M. Kushiner, Brazos Press

8) *The Creator and the Cosmos*, Hugh Ross, Ph. D., Navpress Publishing Group, P.O. Box 35001, Colorado Springs, Colorado 80935

**General Apologetics:**

1) Holman QuickSource Guide To *Understanding Creation*, Mark Whorton & Hill Roberts
   Holman Reference, Nashville, Tennessee

2) Holman QuickSource Guide To *Christian Apologetics*, Doug Powell.
   *This attractive book reads like an entertaining, informative magazine and not a dull textbook.*

3) *The Case For Christ*, Lee Strobel
   Zondervan Publishing House
   While interviewing and seriously questioning leading experts in theology, archaeology, ancient languages and history, Strobel retraces his journey from atheism to faith in this apologetic that reads like a fast pace novel.

4) *One-Minute Answers to Skeptics* – Concise Responses to the Top 40 Questions,
   Charlie H. Campbell, Harvest House Publishers, Eugene, Oregon
   *A refreshing model of conversational apologetics!* *This book will equip you to always be ready to give an answer for the hope that lies within you.* Nancy Leigh DeMoss

***

The following apologetic websites and organizations differ on the creation-time question. Some believe in a recent creation (young earth creationists) and others much longer (old earth creationists). And others believe that the time question, while important, is a secondary issue and prefer to encourage a unified response against secular humanism by publicizing problems in evolution as well as showing the evidence for intelligent design.

There are no hints in the Holy Scriptures that our personal beliefs pertaining to the age of the earth will ever be under consideration by Christ on our day of judgment (Hebrews 9:27). Rather our final judgment will be based upon our relationship with Christ (John 14:6). What then should be our apologetic priority – 1) trying to defend the fine points of a particular creative time scale, or 2) showing the evidence of a Creator God and that He entered our world in the person of Jesus Christ?

Since there are Christians that have been converted from a materialistic evolutionary atheistic/agnostic faith, but still believe in a very old universe, one also wonders how
many others are still atheists or agnostics because of their resistance to recent creation time-scale apologetics. Dr. Jobe Martin, author of *The Evolution of a Creationist*, took five years to change from an agnostic to a 6-day, 24-hour creationist. At one point he was a Christian who believed in theistic evolution. The time-scale was the last to change for him. Evangelicals seem to forget--our job is not to convert people to our way of thinking and interpretation on all points biblical and scientific, but to Christ. I recall one apologist that has been under attack from other apologists over the time question. Some churches resist having him as a speaker because of the potential for conflict in their congregations over the creation-time question. While I do not accept everything he says, I acknowledge that my secular neighbors are much more likely to come to Christ through him than many of the young-earth creationists. (Does anybody accept absolutely everything from anyone?) Yet this old-earth-creation apologist does have the ability to talk to secular people and has been a soul winner of some tough-minded secular skeptics. I have personally witnessed his Christian response to skeptical questions in a very crowded secular university audience, and it was powerful. When the audience’s response changed from we-got-you type of laughing, while the question was being read, to serious silent reflection in response to his answer, it was obvious that spiritual seeds had been planted. I applaud him and desire to support that kind of ministry. I wonder how many others are not saved because “Christians” resisted having this speaker at their church for their secular neighbors to hear.

Christ taught that “Any kingdom divided against itself will be ruined, and a house divided against itself will fall” (Luke 11:17 – NIV). Today the secular humanist’s house stands as a massive edifice in our society while our house is divided. If evangelicals desire to bring the secular house down, then their own house must be united in this effort.

Therefore, the reader is encouraged to support those organizations that spend resources in battling the real problems of atheism, agnosticism, secularism, and humanism vs. those that battle each other over the age of the earth and universe. One minister privately confessed to me that because of the potential for conflict in our sanctuaries over the time question, some ministers avoid scientific apologetics altogether. This is most unfortunate as it leaves our youth defenseless to the scientific attacks from the humanists. All organizations are valuable due to the resources they offer. The following organizational listing is in alphabetical order:

**Apologetic Websites:** (The following websites did not post regular mail addresses.)

1) ApologeticsIndex.org  
2) http://bethinking.org  
3) boundless.org  
4) http://CreationSafaris.com  
5) http://crev.info  
6) www.evolutionnews.org  
7) http://genesisveracityfoundation.com  
8) www.intelligentdesign.org  
9) www.idthefuture.org  
10) www.leestrobel.com  
11) www.theocca.org
Apologetic Organizations:

1) Access Research Network, P.O. Box 38609, Colorado Springs, Colorado, 80937-8069  (719) 633-1772  Website: www.arn.org

2) AlwaysBeReady.com, PO Box 130342 Carlsbad, CA 92013-0342  ABR Store: 1-888-710-2896  Website: alwaysbeready.com

3) Ankerberg Theological Research Institute, P.O., Box 8977, Chattanooga, TN, 37414  (423) 892-7722  Website: The John Ankerberg Show: http://www.jashow.org

4) Answers in Genesis, P.O. Box 510, Hebron, KY 41048  Phone: (859) 727-2222, Events: (800) 350-3232  Website: www.answersingenesis.org

5) Apologetics.com, Inc, 1900 South Western Ave, San Pedro, CA 90732  Website: www.apologetics.com

6) Christian Research Institute – CRI, P.O. Box 8500, Charlotte, NC 28271-8500  (888) 7000-CRI or 700-0274  Website: www.equip.org

7) Come Reason Ministries, PO Box 20527, Riverside, CA 92516  (866) 95-REASON  Website: www.comereason.org

8) Creation Moments, P.O. Box 839, Foley, MN 56329 (800) 422-4253  Local: (320) 968-4092,  Website: www.creationmoments.com

9) Creation Research Society, P.O. Box 8263, St Joseph, MO 64508-8263  Book Store: 1-977-CRS-BOOK,  Website: www.creationresearch.org

10) Creation Science Evangelism, P.O. Box 37338, Pensacola, Florida 32526  Website: www.drDino.com  1-877-479-3466 (USA only)  1-850-479-3466

11) Crossexamined.org, PO Box 78956, Charlotte, NC 28271  Website: crossexamined.org

12) C.S. Lewis Society, 2430 Welbilt Blvd., Trinity, FL 34656  Website: www.apologetics.org

13) Discovery Institute, 208 Columbia Street, Seattle, WA 98104  (206) 292-0401  Website: www.discovery.org

14) Fixed Point Foundation, 2828 Culver Road, Birmingham, Alabama 35223  Phone: 205-414-6311,  Website: WWW.FIXED-POINT.ORG

16) Intelligent Design & Evolution Awareness (IDEA) Center  
       PO Box 3245, Seattle, WA 98104, Website: www.ideacenter.org

17) ImpactApologetics.com, PO Box 78956, Charlotte, NC 28271  
       Website: www.ImpactApologetics.com

18) Institute for Creation Research, P.O. Box 59029, Dallas, Texas 75229  
       Website: www.icr.org

19) Leadership U, Faculty Commons, 2001 W. Plano Parkway #2700,  
       Plano, TX 75075-8632, Phone: 972-516-0516,  
       Email: info@facultycommons.org  
       Websites: www.leaderu.com & www.facultycommons.org

20) Nehemiah Institute, Inc., 3735 Harrodsburg Rd., Suite 150, Lexington, KY 40513  
       (800) 948-3101   Website: www.NehemiahInstitute.com

21) Probe Ministries, 2001 W. Plano Parkway, Plano, Texas 75075-8632  
       972-941-4546 Website: www.probe.org

22) Ravi Zacharias International Ministries, 4725 Peachtree Corners Circle, Suite 250  
       Norcross, Georgia 30092, (770) 449-6766 Website: www.rzim.org

23) Reasons to Believe, P.O. Box 5978, Pasadena, CA 91117  
       (626) 335-1480   Website: www.reasons.org

24) Reasoning from the Scriptures, P.O. Box 2526, Frisco, Texas 75034,  
       (214) 618-0912   Website: http://www.ronrhodes.org/Downloadable.html

25) Stand To Reason, 1438 East 33rd Street, Signal Hill, CA 90755  
       Voicemail (800) 2-REASON, Website: www.str.org

26) Summit Ministries, P.O. Box 207, Manitou Springs, Colorado 80829  
       (866) 786-6483 or (719) 685-9103   Website: www.Summit.org
Chapter 3: Political Pressures, Prophets, and Public Spirituality

Dr. Jerry Bergman’s *Slaughter of the Dissidents, Volume 1 – The Shocking Truth About Killing The Careers Of Darwin Doubters* shows that some have lost teaching jobs simply because they encouraged their students to question evolution. Ben Stein’s documentary *Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed* carries the same theme. Today, we are witnessing an increase in political activism and funding to oppose anything even remotely hostile to macroevolution.

The *Scientific American*, January 2009 issue cites Eugenie C. Scott, director of the National Center for Science Education, as “an authority on the antievolution movement.” (page 6) The National Center for Science Education has all the legal and technical resources to challenge any school district with costly litigation and to intimidate any teacher into silent censorship that would even consider presenting scientific evidence questioning macroevolution. The National Center for Science serves as the call center for anyone with a complaint on an evolution doubter that is also in a position to influence children. Eugenie Scott’s own testimony in Ben Stein’s *Expelled*, while smiling in front of a U.S. map decorated with many little red dots of activity, shows just how aggressive her organization has been all across the U.S. With humanistic religious fervor they have absolutely zero tolerance toward anyone that causes a child to doubt macroevolution. This is amazing considering the evolutionary scientists that admit macroevolution is in need of more supporting evidence.

This same January 2009 *Scientific American* issue (page 99) encourages readers to be organized and active in their schools and communities. Here is their “What to do” list of suggestions:

If controversy over the teaching of evolution erupts in your area, here are some actions you can take:

- Resolving the controversy requires thinking politically, which means forming coalitions. Join with like-minded science educators, scientists, members of the clergy and other citizens to convince policymakers not to accede to creationist proposals.

- Keep in mind that the goal is not only to keep creationism out of the science classroom but also to ensure that evolution is taught properly – without qualifiers such as “only a theory” and unaccompanied by specious “evidence against evolution.”

- Be ready to rebut assertions that evolution is a theory in crisis; that evolution is a threat to religion, morality and society; and that it is only fair to teach “both sides” of the issue.
• Arrange for defenders of evolution to write letters to the editor and op-eds, attend and speak at meetings of the board of education or legislature, and work to turn out the vote on Election Day.


Readers should clearly understand that the National Center for Science Education is a Darwin advocacy group and as such is not capable of encouraging an open forum pro and con on origin issues. Advocating such a public dialog is against its agenda. This inability to question and debate evolution conflicts with the notion that science is always self-testing its theories. Good science does this.

Darwin promoters also know to call the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU). Sears and Osteen admitted that the ACLU uses their 176 million dollars in assets and over 1,000 attorneys to “engage in an ongoing campaign of legal intimidation, misinformation, and fear especially to suppress the rights of Darwin skeptics.”¹ Possible Christian legal organizations that could help fight back if they had the backing of more evangelicals are the Alliance Defense Fund (www.alliancedefensefund.org), the American Center for Law and Justice (www.aclj.org), and the Rutherford Institute (www.rutherford.org). Where is the evangelical counter organization to the National Center for Science Education or the ACLU?

It is no mystery that students believe there are no scientific problems with evolution. Their textbooks exclude it, and many teachers are intimidated into silence. Dr. G.A. Kerkut was once the exception. Dr. Kerkut has taught undergraduates on various aspects of biology. He also taught that those who really understand evolution can give scientific reasons for and against it. Yet when he first prompts his students for evolutionary problems, they typically respond with, “There isn’t any evidence against evolution, sir.”² This common response caused Dr. Kerkut to admit, “In this he [the science student] differs not one bit from the irrational theological student of the bygone age who would mumble his dogma and hurry through his studies in order to reach the peace and plenty of the comfortable living in the world outside. But what is worse, the present-day student claims to be different from his predecessor in that he thinks scientifically and despises dogma, and when challenged he says in defense, ‘After all, one has to accept something, or else it takes a very long time to get anywhere.’”³

Please understand, Dr. Kerkut’s teaching style of asking students evidence against evolution is no longer permitted in most schools today. Dr. Kerkut’s challenge occurred fifty years ago. His book: *Implication of Evolution*, published by the Pergamon Press, Ltd., shows some evolutionary problems that were known by a limited few at that time. His amusing dialog with students, presented in his book’s introduction, is a sad commentary on evolutionary indoctrination fifty years ago. This situation has only become worse. Yet questions remain: Why are scientific problems in evolutionary theory
censored at all? And why are atheists and agnostics more alert and active toward the indoctrination of students than evangelicals are in reporting censorship?

The Public Lynching of a Darwin Skeptic

Roger DeHart is another example. For ten years DeHart taught biology and environmental chemistry at Burlington-Edison High School just north of Seattle. Then in the summer of 1997 he got a call from the school superintendent, Paul Chaplik. “Roger, we have received a complaint against you from the ACLU. It involves your teaching of evolution.”

Dr. Chaplik interviewed several students “with differing viewpoints on origins” who “went out of their way to say that they felt DeHart covered the topic in a fair and equitable manner. Dr. Chaplik then related the results of his investigation to the ACLU lawyer, who seemed determined to stop at nothing short of getting DeHart fired.”

By July 1997 DeHart’s principal Beth VanderVeen wrote him and said that he was to teach Darwinism only as a proven fact.

As DeHart’s teaching style became public, public pressure began to mount against him.

Then on May of 2000, DeHart submitted articles from various respectable periodicals – *Nature, Natural History, The Scientist, and the American Biology Teacher*. *The Scientist* dealt with the peppered-moth controversy. *The American Biology Teacher* showed the fraudulent Haeckel’s embryo still used in biology texts as evidence for evolution. Even though DeHart’s students could access these articles at any good library, the district informed DeHart that he could not give copies of these articles to his students.

In short, DeHart was removed from his biology teaching position and forced to teach physical/earth science to non-college bound students with typical discipline problems. The new biology teacher for DeHart’s old class did not have any teaching experience. The new teacher was also DeHart’s former student. His degree was in physical education, not biology. DeHart had asked him why he had chosen a PE major, and he responded that he started out in biology but found that it was too rigorous for him.

DeHart applied for a biology/physical science position with another school. He admitted that there was a public controversy at his old school and was told that his approach would be “good science.” However, the local atheist and humanist organizations were active again in letter-writing and phone-calling against DeHart. The public lynching started again. Various articles appeared again with total disregard for the facts. Despite receiving top reviews from administrators and students, DeHart decided to resign.

Because of time and space limitation, this review has been a pathetically short summary of the various issues DeHart had to deal with. For a more complete review see Dr. Jerry
How can we celebrate diversity or even believe that academic freedom exist in our public schools with academic censorship like this? All this tends to make the liberal humanist’s mantra “respect for individuals and ideas” or “tolerance” hypocritical and hollow.

The Prophets

Bishop John Hughes best articulated the Catholic position when he told New York City officials in 1840: “To make an infidel what is it necessary to do? Cage him up in a room, give him a secular education from the age of five years to twenty-one, and I ask you what he will come out, if not an infidel [atheist]? … Now I ask you whether it was the intention of the Legislature of New York, or of the people of the State, that the public schools should be made precisely such as the infidels [atheists] want?... They say their instruction is not sectarianism; but it is; and of what kind? The sectarianism of infidelity [atheism] in its every feature.”

A confession in Orestes Brownson’s autobiography supports Bishop Hughes’ observations. Orestes Brownson, a Unitarian clergyman in the Boston area converted to Catholicism and then later made the following confession in his autobiography of his and other fellow Unitarian ministers’ secret motives. Brownson admitted, “The great object was to get rid of Christianity, and to convert our churches into halls of science. The plan was not to make open attacks on religion, although we might belabor the clergy and bring them into contempt where we could; but to establish a system of state, - we said national – schools, from which all [traditional] religion was to be excluded, in which nothing was to be taught but such knowledge as is verifiable by the senses, and to which all parents were to be compelled by law to send their children…. The first thing to be done was to get this system of schools established. For this purpose, a secret society was formed, and the whole country was to be organized…. This organization was commenced in 1829, in the city of New York…. this much I can say, the plan has been successfully pursued, the views we put forth have gained great popularity, and the whole action of the country on the subject has taken the direction we sought to give it.”

Over one hundred years after Bishop Hughes accused the New York city’s officials of creating public schools of infidelity (atheism), the echo of infidelity was heard again. In 1973, the state superintendent for public schools in Arizona, Dr. W. P. Shofstall admitted, “The atheists have, for all practical purposes, taken over public education in this country.”

“In 1925, O. M. Norlie, a longtime professor at Luther College, in Decorah, Iowa wrote, ‘Secular schools by their very secular nature are de-Christianizing the land.’”

In 1930, Charles Francis Potter writing in *Humanism – A New Religion*, page 128 predicted: “Education is thus a most powerful ally of Humanism, and every public school is a school of Humanism. What can the theistic Sunday-schools, meeting for an
hour once a week, and teaching only a fraction of the children, do to stem the tide of a five-day program of humanistic teaching?"

In over fifty years since the 1930 publication above, the humanists have not changed their goals. Writing in The Humanist, Jan/Feb 1983, page 26 John Dunphy’s article “A Religion for a New Age” stated: “I am convinced that the battle for humankind’s future must be waged and won in the public school classrooms by teachers who correctly perceive their role as proselytizers of a new faith… [one that recognizes] Divinity in every human being… The classroom must and will become an arena of conflict between the old and the new--the rotting corpse of Christianity, together with all its adjacent evils and misery, and the new faith.”

Paul Blanshard, a well-known humanist, shows how much more observant the humanists are than most evangelicals. “I think that the most important factor moving us toward a secular society has been the educational factor. Our schools may not teach Johnny to read properly, but the fact that Johnny is in school until he is sixteen tends to lead toward the elimination of [traditional] religious superstition. The average American child now acquires a high-school education, and this militates against Adam and Eve and all other myths of alleged history…. When I was one of the editors of The Nation in the twenties, I wrote an editorial explaining that golf and intelligence were the two primary reasons that men did not attend church. Perhaps I would now say golf and a high-school diploma.”

(Note carefully that no concern is expressed in regard to the fact that Johnny is not taught how to read, but that Johnny is becoming like them – an atheistic or agnostic believer, a religious humanist. It now seems that a public policy of school choice that includes private independent schools may be our remaining option to counter this massive humanistic evangelism on America’s children.)

If every parent in America knew what was really going on in the public schools, there would be a revolution. – Syndicated columnist Thomas Sowell

Dr. Francis A. Schaeffer also noted the humanistic prophetic agenda: “America is moving at great speed toward a totally humanistic society and state. Do we suppose this trend will leave our little projects, lives, and churches untouched? When a San Francisco Orthodox Presbyterian congregation can be dragged into court for breaking the law against discrimination because it dismissed an avowed, practicing homosexual as an organist, can we be so deaf as not to hear all the warning bells?”

Many years later after Dr. Schaeffer’s warning, it’s reported: “In New Jersey, after the establishment of a quasi-marital ‘civil unions’ scheme, a Methodist institution was stripped of its tax exempt status when it declined, as a matter of religious conscience, to permit a facility it owned and operated to be used for ceremonies blessing homosexual unions.”

In 1984 Richard Cizik published his book, The High Cost of Indifference, Can Christian Afford Not to Act? In his book, Richard quoted James Panoch and David Barr. “The Supreme Court has not removed religion from the public schools, Panoch and Barr insist: ‘We did. Uninformed teachers, an unconcerned public, unconscious churchmen – all have their hand in systematically eliminating all mention of the Bible and religion from
significant areas of school life.’ Christians should carefully re-evaluate the opportunity available in public schools (pg 145). Although ‘release time religious education’ has been available to Christians for most of this century, very few Protestants, particularly evangelicals, take advantage of this great opportunity” (pg. 143).

Five years before the Columbine Massacre, Samuel Blumenfeld wrote in 1994: “The system [public schools] has become so corrupt and perverse that children are at enormous risk the moment they enter it. They are at risk academically, spiritually, morally and physically.”

Why do we ignore these prophets?

**Pushing Religious Humanism on Children**

Mr. Blumenfeld also showed parallels in the Humanist Manifesto of 1933 and the National Education Association’s (NEA) resolutions and publications. The purpose of the Humanist Manifesto was to announce a new religion. The purposes of the NEA’s resolutions are to announce humanistic social engineering agendas. From parallels in these two documents alone, it is easy to show the humanistic religious agenda for our schools.

In fact, the first tenet of the Humanist Manifesto of 1933 reads: “Religious humanists regard the universe as self-existing and not created.” This old humanistic tenet now goes against the latest scientific evidence with Edwin Hubble’s discovery of the Hubble Law. Big Bang cosmology, supported with the latest scientific evidence, shows that the universe--mass, energy, space, and time had a beginning. The Humanist Manifesto of 1933 is in scientific error. Our universe had a beginning. It was created.

Since the very first tenet of the Humanist Manifesto of 1933 is a denial of God’s creative action, it is not surprising that a newer NEA’s resolution reads “The Association … believes that legislation and regulations that mandate the teaching of religious doctrines, such as ‘creation science,’ violate both student and teacher rights.” Never mind the fact that the humanist’s religious statements, that are now scientifically in error, were once forced on non-humanistic students. Apparently only secular teachers and secular students have religious rights to secular humanistic beliefs that override the rights of all others.

So who is forcing religion now on the children? Interestingly, the writers of the Humanist Manifesto II, forty years later, removed the direct reference to “the universe as self-existing and not created” because it is obviously a religious doctrinal statement of belief that is inconsistent with the latest scientific evidence in cosmology. In the meantime, religious humanistic beliefs are still forced on children. The first tenet has been replaced in part with the words, “As nontheists, we begin with humans not God, nature not deity. Nature may indeed be broader and deeper than we now know; any new discoveries, however, will but enlarge our knowledge of the natural.”
How can they be so sure that any new discovery will enlarge their knowledge of only the natural? They have already made a serious mistake about the nature of matter, energy, time, and space being “self-existing and not created.” Every present indication appears that such anticipated knowledge will only add knowledge of the supernatural, especially when one considers the metaphysical nature of propositions preceding Big Bang Cosmology. Oxford’s Peters Atkins (atheist) admitted, “If we are to be honest, then we have to accept that science will be able to claim complete success only if it achieves what many might think impossible: accounting for the emergence of everything from absolutely nothing.”

Since humanists cling to a faith that denies God, they are left with nature alone as the only reality. This is a real puzzle for them since their only reality (nature) had a beginning. The humanist’s god (nature) had a beginning. The scientific evidence for the origin of mass, energy, space, and time now puts very strange requirements on the nature-is-the-only-reality doctrine. The scientific evidence in Big Bang cosmology reveals that something that transcends the physical universe was therefore responsible for its beginning. Rather than accept this, humanists choose to believe that maybe “pre-nature” is composed of something other than mass, energy, space, and time. It’s simply a belief that something connected to nature must somehow still exist that’s natural. The problem—there is no scientific evidence to support such an entity is “natural.” It is purely a statement of blind faith that the “pre-nature” of everything is still natural. The humanist’s pre-nature is not natural, it transcends nature. It points to something supernatural. Since the humanist’s “pre-nature” points to something that transcends the natural, the humanist is left with a peek toward the evidence of God.

When one removes God from society, mankind becomes god. Mankind then becomes the basis for ethics and morality. This is why issues of human sexuality, abortion, and euthanasia are pushed into the political arena for public debate and vote or simply decided by liberal judicial tyranny. This is the religious left’s means of pushing their morality on society. This is how they are socially engineering our culture and laws. This new religion is called humanism. It’s a faith rooted in the belief that mankind can solve all problems without God and can also define morality without God. It’s based on the belief that VOID is the only reality. It’s the driving philosophy for liberal politics and public education. Many politically active school teachers are in agreement with this humanistic agenda. If there is no God, then one must look to the state for answers. It is no accident that many so enamored with the new liberal agendas are adamantly opposed to anything associated with traditional beliefs. These people are not operating in a philosophical or religious vacuum. They are not without faith themselves. Many simply believe that God does not exist and are happy to push their secular religion on America’s children. Now one religion (traditional) has been replaced with another religion (humanism). It’s a belief that the biblical God does not exist. The American people need to realize that there is no separation of church and state in our government schools and never will be. As long as the human element is involved, religious philosophy of some type, including atheism, will be in our schools.
I visited a Free Thinkers (humanist/atheistic/agnostic/secularist) club once during a non-political year. After the meeting they promoted materials that were opposed to school vouchers as if citizens might vote on such an issue in the future. Now, why were these Free Thinkers so opposed to school choice, even though a ballot initiative was nowhere on the political horizon and neither was it a political active year? Could it be that if students had a choice to go to a traditionally religious school, they might not be indoctrinated in the non-traditional religions of atheism or agnosticism? Should evangelicals at least match the political energy of these humanists and publicize the benefits of school choice even when the option is not up for vote?

The popular commentator Cal Thomas in a 1993 article titled: “Liberalism Relies on Public Schools,” wrote: “…public education is the training ground, the hothouse, the farm team, for the next generation of liberals. How else to inculcate multiculturalism, political correctness and historical revisionism into children? How else to drum into them the view that they evolved from slime, that sex is an intramural sport and that liberal agenda is best? Children might not be expected to encounter these ‘truths’ on their own and are even less likely to learn them in private schools, especially private, religious schools where a real education, a moral conscience and wisdom can still be found.”

*The philosophy of the school room in one generation will be the philosophy of the government in the next.*

21

Should Americans be surprised with new socialistic political pressures for government to take over health care or manage General Motors and banking issues? A look at the National Education Association’s political agenda shows no surprises and explains why our students accept socialistic ideologies.

Whatever philosophy controls the educational system will eventually play a large part in controlling the way people think and act. What we see happening in our country today is, to a large extent, the result of people acting out what they learned in school.

John W. Whitehead in The Stealing of America

22

Modern liberalism is powerful because it has enlisted our cultural elites, those who man the institutions that manufacture, manipulate, and disseminate ideas, attitudes, and symbols… Robert Bork later explained these are the schools, courts, and a majority of the Supreme Court.

23

As I looked over the Free Thinker’s political material against school choice, I wondered how people at my church would have responded. If someone had promoted school choice or tuition tax credit legislation at my church, would the literature displayed be valued? Could evangelicals even perceive the spiritual contest against the forces of darkness? Would ministers even have the courage to speak out? Would the fear of offending a public school teacher silence them? In a Focus on the Family letter, Dr. Dobson reported that “In 2004, approximately 25 million evangelicals failed to cast a ballot.” And in a Focus on the Family pamphlet titled Why Christians Should Vote, it
reported that in 2002 only 43 percent of evangelical Christians actually voted. If so many do not vote, how many more failed to support a godly candidate or righteous proposition with their time or money? And why should they vote or volunteer for anything if God is in total control? Thus our sound-bite theologies inhibit us.

God spoke through the minor prophet Amos and said to “establish judgment in the gate” (Amos 5:15-KJV). This is our responsibility, not God’s. The establishing of justice and judgment in the gates does not happen for people that believe God is in such control that God will do everything for them. The gates were public places where public discussions/debates took place and civil/legal matters were determined. Because the gates were accessible to everyone, anyone (men or women) could give a witness, testimony or argument on any issue. The Amos passage then implies that God is very serious with establishing right public policies in public places, but leaves this to us. At another moment God told Amos, “But let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream” (Amos 5:24-KJV). This meant that God really intended for righteous laws and just decisions to be enacted and implemented in all parts of society. As a river is unstoppable, so God’s righteous judgment was to be unstoppable and flow into every level of society – private and public. But God gave this responsibility to us. God repeated this message to the minor prophet Zechariah as well. “These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbour; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates” (Zechariah 8:16-KJV). Again, God repeated what was close to his heart – right judgment on legal/political matters private and public. God spoke these instructions through his prophets simply because the people of God were not doing this. Israel had become very corrupt and ignorant of God’s concerns. God’s will was not implemented on earth because God’s people were disobedient. The same is true for our time. Note carefully, the “God who is in control” has assigned the responsibility of these things to us. If we are disobedient, don’t expect God’s will to be implemented. How can God be in control when so many evangelicals are out of His control?

If the Holy Spirit first inspired Amos to write about international human right violations and international legal matters (Amos 1 and 2), could the concern with domestic politics be more spiritual than evangelicals perceive? Charles Swindoll, like many evangelicals, believes that, “God has not ordained government to be the transforming agent of salvation or the platform for the proclamation of His truth in the world.”\textsuperscript{24} Yet on page xvii, Swindoll also believes the Church should wake up and “engage the culture for Jesus Christ.” Now on what scriptural basis should the Church engage the culture and not transform government, or not be a transforming agent through government? On what basis should Christians be transforming agents through culture and not government? Unfortunately, because of such comments like Swindoll’s, too many evangelicals mistakenly believe they are excused from being a transforming agent in government altogether. While we exercise neutrality on state policies, the godless freely impose their humanistic religion on everyone else, and hardly does the public hear a complaint from us. Why? In truth, someone’s religion, either traditional or non-traditional, will be publicly expressed and encoded in our laws. In contrast to popular evangelical thinking, God has called the Church to be the transforming agent – salt and light just as Jesus is to
be Lord in all of life—private and public. What a contrast this is for a Church that is supposedly awakening. It stands in contrast to our history as well. “In 1779, while in a military encampment on the banks of a river, Delaware Indians chiefs came to Washington and brought some of their youth to be trained in America’s schools.” How did Washington respond? “You do well to wish to learn our arts and our ways of life, and above all, the religion of Jesus Christ. These will make you a greater and happier people than you are; Congress will do everything they can to assist you in this wise intention.”

William J. Federer reminds us that “on December 3, 1803, it was recommended by President Thomas Jefferson that the Congress of the United States pass a treaty with the tribe of the Kaskaskia Indians. Included in this treaty was the annual support to a Catholic missionary priest of $100, to be paid out of the Federal treasury. Later in 1806 and 1807, two other similar treaties were made with the Wyandotte and Cherokee tribes.”

Apparently, we once thought it acceptable for government to be engaged in Christian activity. Since the atheists and agnostics have gone beyond influence to forcing their philosophies in our legislatures, courts, and schools, shouldn’t the Church wake up and engage these government elements for the gospel of Jesus Christ and in contrast to the secularists, give people a choice in education?

The author of Politics According to the Bible, Wayne Gruden, reminds us how Daniel was a clear, bold, godly witness to King Nebuchadnezzar. “Therefore, O king, be pleased to accept my advice: Renounce your sins by doing what is right, and your wickedness by being kind to the oppressed. It may be that then your prosperity will continue” (Daniel 4:27 NIV). Professor Grudem says this approach is very different from our modern multicultural approach. “O King Nebuchadnezzar, I am a Jewish prophet, but I would not presume to impose my Jewish moral standards on your Babylonian kingdom. Ask your astronomers and your soothsayers! They will guide you in your own traditions. Then follow your own heart! It would not be my place to speak to you about right and wrong.”

When considering the minor prophets and their godly examples, Bruce Wilkinson and Kenneth Boa, authors of Talk Thru the Bible made a chilling and shameful indictment of Christians. Their observation clearly explains our indifference to legal and political issues. “The seventeen prophetic books [in the Old Testament] comprise about one-fourth of Scripture and are crucial from a theological and historical point of view. Yet their message and meaning evade more people than any other section of the Bible, principally because of neglect.” These prophets are especially crucial for our time because they clearly expressed God’s desire for social and political righteousness. But if we ignore them how can we know God’s heart on these issues? This is how evangelicals have rejected God’s knowledge and ignored God’s laws, just as Hosea and Zechariah’s generation did (Hosea 4:6, Zechariah 7:5-7, 12-13). Henrietta C. Mears, a past mentor to Bill Bright and Billy Graham, would agree. “Amos proclaimed a message so far ahead of his time that most of the human race, and a large part of all Christendom have not yet caught up with it.” If we don’t know God’s heart and His requirements for public policy, as the Old Testament prophets had admonished, why should we be involved? We are very stupid in our knowledge of God and his word. Thus we are too stupid to implement God’s will on earth.
Jumping to the New Testament, we find that God has not changed his mind concerning righteousness in public policies. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Jesus the Christ in Matthew 18:6 (KJV).

Do we really understand how un-Christ-like this sounds against our culturally perceived nice Jesus? Today Christ could say, “Anyone that influences a child to reject Me should be shot on the spot!” What’s the difference in being thrown overboard to drown or being put in front of a firing squad? The end result is the same. Does this sound un-Christ-like? Does this judgment sound extreme? Our puzzled feelings concerning the nurturing nature of Christ suggest that we could be the ones that are deceived by a cultural misunderstanding of Jesus. We are out of balance, because we fail to see just how serious Christ views sinful influence on children. It’s true that Christ didn’t hang a millstone on anyone and then throw him overboard. Yet evangelicals have yet to match this Christ-like passion to protect children. How do you think now God views apathy and indifference to public injustice and evil policies of indoctrinating children in atheism or agnosticism? How can Americans ever expect to have God’s blessings with such indifference to God’s heart in matters of public education? Christians that think themselves exempt from taking a stand will have a shocking judgment day when they stand before this holy God (Luke 12:47-48). They will stand before this righteous Judge who never changes (Numbers 23:19, Malachi 3:6, Hebrews 3:8). Unfortunately, we all are also repeating the results of this public sin in our time as well.

The bottom line is this: Evangelicals are ineffective because too many are too stupid and spiritually immature, including many of their leaders. We are as godless and indifferent to God’s heart as the rebellious generation the prophets tried to warn. Evangelicals have forsaken God’s law just as the prophets’ generations have. Our profit, pleasures, and truncated spirituality have superseded God’s call on us to sacrifice and fight for righteousness (Isaiah 58:6). We have ignored God’s unchanging heart to protect the helpless children far too long (Isaiah 1:17, James 1:27). Still trying to get our attention, as God did with Amos, Hosea and Zechariah’s generation, God has permitted us to begin to reap what we have sown by allowing us to witness the suffering of our children and society. Christians died at Columbine and other schools simply because we did not share God’s concern of protecting children. We still do not perceive the potential of atheistically induced death in our schools. Solomon said that the simple will suffer (Proverb 22:3). Why then should God protect the helpless, if in our apathy we don’t protect the helpless? Why even pray for God’s help if we are not listening to God’s heart cry for righteousness in the gates the children pass through? Hosea said that as we ignore God’s concerns, God will ignore our concerns—our children (Hosea 4:6). The sad fact for most evangelical congregations is that humanistic influence on children is not even a public prayer request. What does this now say about us, our concerns, and our spirituality?

Columbine happened because our public sin has gone on too long. How can we not expect to reap godlessness when we have sown public policies of godlessness for decades? This view of God that permits evil to the “innocent” is shocking to evangelicals.
that have only been taught of God’s love and grace. Consequently, the popular feel-good view of God is out of balance and not real (1 Peter 4:17-18). It’s an evangelical idol god that doesn’t exist. If God is in the micromanagement control mode, as many evangelicals mistakenly believe, He would need to stop all evil now and immediately become our Judge.

Our sins involve much more than personal and private affairs. Sins against God include collective and national sins too. Both the Old and New Testaments affirm that no one or nation can continually grieve God without consequences (Genesis 6:3, Ephesians 4:30, 5:6). Since we have rejected God in our schools and national policies and in our carnality have blamed others, God is beginning to reject America. Just as Isaiah’s generation sensed God’s rejection when they prayed (Isaiah 58), God has also rejected our prayers for another Great Awakening. Why should God answer our prayers, if we like ancient Israel are not serious for change? What is a Christian conversion anyway - conversion to church attendance alone? Not hardly. Authentic conversions involves a changed life and a life of obedience (2 Corinthians 5:17, Matthew 7:21, 2 Peter 1:10).

Ken Connor and John Revell’s, authors of Sinful Silence – When Christians Neglect Their Civic Duty, wrote: “If the majority of members in a local congregation understand God’s concern but refuses to function as salt and light in the moral issues of the government, they should not be surprised if God rejects their worship services, prayer meetings, revival services, mission offerings, building-fund drives, Easter pageants, Christmas pageants, evangelistic emphases, Sunday School emphasis, and so on. It should be no surprise when this church sees little or no change in the people’s lifestyles, for God may not be hearing those prayers for spiritual renewal.” Ken and John base their argument on several scriptures including: “If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me” Psalm 66:18 (KJV). Dr Francis Schaeffer adds, “It is my firm belief that when we stand before Jesus Christ, we will find that it has been the weakness and accommodation of the evangelical group on the issues of the day that has been largely responsible for the loss of the Christian ethos which has taken place in the area of culture in our own country over the last forty to sixty years.” Charles Finney, a famous evangelist during the early1800s, was used by God to win thousands to Christ. Finney said, “He [God] will bless or curse this nation, according to the course they [Christians] take [in politics.]” The sociologist James Davison Hunter concurs. “When Israel reflected the justice and holiness of God’s character in its collective life, it was blessed; when it rebelled, the nation was disciplined.” We are seeing all this come to negative fruition in our time.

Gary DeMar, author of Whoever Controls the Schools Rules the World, said that for Christians not to take a side in this struggle is to acquiesce to the competition. DeMar referenced Randy Thomasson, president of the Campaign for Children and Families, as a supporting opinion: “It’s because Christian colleges and churches have ignored the political process for so long. Now the political process, absent religious values, is coming back to assault the church.”
The Destruction of Evangelicals without Knowledge

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children’ ” Hosea 4:6 (NIV).

In Hosea’s time God’s people were destroyed because they lack knowledge. They simply didn’t know what God required of them (Hosea 4:1, 6, Amos 3:10). The same is true for our time. God’s people were destroyed during the Columbine Massacre because they lacked knowledge of God’s concern on public education, they lacked knowledge on the deadly ramifications of atheism, and they lacked knowledge for the evidence of God. We also lack knowledge on how to combat judicial tyranny.

Now evangelical influence is destroyed because we lack the knowledge how to succeed in this struggle against atheism. Our legal and technical preparation is pathetic. In Cobb County Georgia in 2002 after more than 2,000 parents complained that textbooks presented evolution as a fact, stickers were put inside the books’ front covers by public school officials. They read: This textbook contains material on evolution. Evolution is a theory, not a fact, regarding the origin of living things. This material should be approached with an open mind, studied carefully and critically considered.

Then six parents with the legal help of the American Civil Liberties Union sued. This resulted in a federal judge ordering the stickers to be removed from the textbooks. The secular media publicized the ACLU attorney’s comment: “They’re [Students are] going to be permitted to learn science unadulterated by religious dogma.”

So where was the legal muscle of these parents and churches to show that this humanistic attorney was seriously mistaken with his science as he promoted his atheistic religion on students? Why didn’t these 2,000 parents appeal because of the humanistic religion in their schools? The answer seems to come from Hosea again. These parents and churches lacked knowledge on how to combat atheism in a secular culture. Putting “Evolution is a theory” label in a textbook does not offer the tools for critically evaluating evolution. Billboards, T-shirts, and brochures publishing a website with scientific reviews of the textbook would have been better. Yes, this takes longer to implement. No quick fix exists for this problem. Labeling evolution a theory may paint a subjective picture in evangelical minds. It does nothing for the secular minds that perceives scientific theories as simply viable working hypotheses. The word evolution is loaded with multiple meanings. Small-scale evolutionary change is a fact, while large-scale changes are theories yet to be verified, as we saw in Chapter 2.

Gary DeMar asked similar questions: “Was there a mass exodus by Christian students? Were there demonstrations in the streets? Christians protest when they see and hear about the seasonal war on Christmas, but they seem indifferent to the fact that there is a daily war for the heart and mind of their own children.”
DeMar also cites Laura Mallory, a mother of three children, who wants Harry Potter books removed from her children’s school library. Gary writes: “Here is an indication of her naivete, believing that if Harry Potter is banished all will be right in the public schools [and religion indoctrination will not occur in the schools].” Laura Mallory and other similar single-issue parents fail to understand the nature of the battle we are in. The Georgia parents lack legal and political knowledge on how to pursue their contest against the humanists. Again God’s people are destroyed for lack of knowledge. Obviously, the Georgia parents were not as prepared as the ACLU. In the years preceding this contest, would their churches have invited a political activist into their sanctuaries to warn them of the potential loss of liberties and how to organize their community to support academic freedom and oppose liberal judges? Would their churches have permitted funds to be collected and then donated to a legal or political organization without feelings of competition for resources? Would they have feared loss of tax-exemption status for their church in this process? Do they know they need to prepare for this battle in our cultural war now? Have they given up? Do we really know that building resources and preparing political groundwork is necessary? In the meantime we are divided with comments like: “The kingdom of God is not built by human strength.” This has the result of putting evangelicals back to sleep pursuing their own personal concerns when in fact--building the kingdom of God on earth does involve obedient human efforts. If this wasn’t true these same ministers would never again ask for more missionary offerings (Romans 10:14-15). Any offering is a measure of human effort in building the kingdom of God on earth.

Do we know that this struggle will involve preparation and endurance over an extended period? This will involve fighting the secular media too. Consequently, like missionaries, we will need means and time in getting the truth to concerned citizens. Unfortunately, the first battle will be in our sanctuaries, because evangelicals lack knowledge and are confused about God’s heart on social issues.

Do evangelicals know that they must also prepare their children in apologetics? Why didn’t these parents remove their children from the schools after saturating fellow students with pointers to scientific resources the ACLU attorney sought to censor? The protest marches of Martin Luther King got the nation’s attention and helped to focus the nation on abuses. If parents and students had so protested with potential consequences of legal penalties from government authorities, would the churches across America have supported them? Did the churches in the school district even attempt to educate the community that religious humanism was being secretly promoted at the expense of academic freedom and science education? Does the voting public know that not all science associated with evolutionary instruction is being taught? Were any preparations made to motivate the community to remove this judge from public service in the future? Why wasn’t the issue of academic freedom brought before the voters in that community? It can now be demonstrated that a more rigorous scientific education can be obtained via independent schools of choice than in the present politically correct government schools. School choice may now get the voters’ attention.
Evangelical influence is destroyed because we have rejected the knowledge of God’s social concerns, knowledge of God’s plan for education, the knowledge of God’s battle plan to uphold righteousness in our public policies, and the knowledge of God’s evidence in creation. How serious are evangelicals in their commitment to defend the knowledge of God’s concerns, the protection of their children, and their liberties? If we don’t have this knowledge, should we be surprised when we lose, our influence is destroyed, and our children killed (Hosea 4:6)? Should we be surprised when our culture and politics become corrupt?

**Evangelical Inhibitions**

You’ve heard it said, “You can never use political solutions for spiritual problems.” Here the evangelicals are school-dead wrong again. The intelligent application of a humanistic school policy together with ignorant and apathetic evangelicals has helped to create the current atheistic/agnostic indoctrination program in American education. In contrast, our Founding Fathers believed that all men are created equal and that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights. With such beliefs it was natural for them to implement a public policy that favored the growth of Christianity. That public expression existed in many forms including the North West Ordinance. Article III expressed the Founding Father’s Christian public education policy clearly: *Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged.* Here a political solution had profound positive spiritual implications for decades. Sadly, American education has eroded toward atheism while evangelicals mistakenly believed public policy doesn’t affect spirituality or that it can be at least neutral. While we desire to minimize our offense to the world with our strategy to “win one heart at a time,” humanists are indoctrinating whole classrooms in godlessness at a time. Jesus’ proverb rings true again, *The children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light* (Luke 16:8b KJV).

You’ve heard it said, “You cannot legislate morality.” This is not at all true. Someone’s morality will always be forced on the rest of us. It will either be special gay rights, same-sex marriage, abortion rights, euthanasia, or wicked public education policies of VOID. Whatever is understood to be legal by the state educated populace, will also be misunderstood by them to be moral. The immoral practice of slavery was finally eliminated via a war and politics. Prohibition against slavery was eventually codified in our Constitution. Somebody’s morality will always be encoded into our laws. What is usually meant by this sound bite is that laws do not reform the heart. However, this is never the function of law in the first place. All laws are meant to constrain and act as a deterrent. Since laws do not reform, should we then become apathetic in the formation and maintenance of all laws altogether? God forbid!

One popular Christian commentator wrote: “Nothing in the Bible commands believers to reform or redeem society through government and politics alone, or even mainly.” As a matter of fact, there is no Christian involved with politics that would ever advocate political action alone or mainly as the means to redeem culture and society. However,
the simpleton evan-jellys\textsuperscript{[A]} that read this popular commentator can easily construe it to mean, “The Bible does not command us to reform or redeem society via government actions at all.” No wonder 24 million Christians failed to vote and many more fail to support/defeat propositions and candidates. Our house is confused and divided. No wonder we are so ineffective (Matthew 12:25). On the contrary, this clearly goes against God’s command to “establish judgment in the gates” (Amos 5:15, 24, Zechariah 8:16). And such souls will be judged by God as unfruitful Law breakers. Imagine now standing before our perfect righteous and holy God when He asks, “If you have accepted Christ, then why didn’t you live like Christ? What have you done to oppose the works of the devil as Christ did” (1 John 3:8)? Christ could also ask: “If you hungered and thirsted for righteousness (Matthew 5:6), then why were you so apathetic in the implementation of righteousness in your society?”

Someone may say, “Jesus, I thought we were not under the law, but under grace.” Then Saint Paul on overhearing this could turn to that person and say, “I was also inspired by the Holy Spirit to write, ‘do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law’” (Romans 3:31 KJV). “Why did you ignore this? Did you only pick what you wanted to believe?” Paul could easily explain, “The ceremonial aspect of the Law, Christ has fulfilled; we are not again so obligated to that part. However, it is very foolish to ever think we are exempt from God’s moral and civil laws.” Then Jesus could reply: “I told you to ‘Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill’ (Matthew 5:17 KJV). When Christ asks you, “What have you done to resist evil influences in your personal life, family, church, society, and culture?” What will your answer be?

In an article from the Christian Research Institute (CRI) titled “Public Education or Pagan Indoctrination?” author Craig Branch wrote, “Much has been written about the slide of our country into humanism and paganism and the resultant culture wars – often viewed by the media as a conservative and Christian backlash. Predictably, the social ill indicators have sharply escalated in our post-Christian or postmodern culture. Much of the blame for this slide can be laid at the steps of a dormant, isolationist church.” Mr. Branch also added, “Apathy, ignorance, notions of helplessness, or lack of spiritual maturity are all that stand in the way of winning this important and strategic battle for our children and the future of America.”

In 1982 Dr. Schaeffer asked some important questions: “Where have the Bible believing Christians been in the last forty years?! …This country is close to being lost, not first of all because of a humanists’ conspiracy. I believe there are those who conspire, but that is not the reason this country is almost lost. …This country is almost lost … because the Bible believing Christians in the last forty years, who have said that they know that the final reality is this infinite personal God, who is the creator, … they said they have known it, and they have done nothing about it as the consensus have changed! There has been a vast silence.”

\textsuperscript{[A]} Jellyfish-like-evangelicals: without sufficient Bible based backbone convictions to affect their politics.
Schaeffer went on to explain future ramifications: “We face a worldview which would have never given us our freedoms, forced upon us by the courts and the government by men holding this other worldview. ... This other view is totally intolerant. I do not think we are going to get another opportunity if we do not take it now in this country. If the Christians specifically and others who love liberty, but specifically the Christians, do not do something about it now, I don’t believe your grandchildren are going to get a chance.”

See Appendix D: Loss of Christian Liberties and Chapter 9 for our future. This loss of liberty is a function of direct liberal policies with poor to no responses against them. Liberal judges are appointed by liberal politicians that are elected by the politically organized and well-funded radical liberal teachers’ unions and voted for by liberally educated people.[B] William Bennett, Secretary of Education under President Reagan, communicated the same thought when he said, “Why is there a battle about our culture? Part of the answer lies in understanding that there is a fundamental difference between many of the most important beliefs of most Americans and the beliefs of a liberal elite that today dominates many of our institutions and who therefore exert influence on American life and culture” (Source: The De-Valuing of America – The fight for Our Culture and Our Children, William J. Bennett, page 26). Thomas Jefferson penned the words of the Declaration of Independence and spoke of a relationship between liberty and God when he asked, “And can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the Gift of God?”

And what can we expect living in this culture of VOID? When a mindset is developed to disregard the Bible as God’s Word, then nothing will prohibit the same mindset to disregard the original intent of our Constitution and Bill of Rights. If we have rejected God’s Word, why should we honor our Founding Father’s constitutional intentions? Liberal judges have and will enact their own laws through creative interpretations. If we are not restricted to our Founding Father’s original intent, then the United States Supreme Court becomes a permanent constitutional convention. If there is no Creator that has endowed us with certain unalienable rights, it will be believed that the state is the supreme authority of such rights. When this becomes the national ethos, our rights will no longer be unalienable, but transferable by state control.

[B] I am forced to use language that politics and culture have adopted. The main problem is not the level of government spending per se, which are issues of concern between conservatives and liberals, but godlessness. Despite religious sentiments from some liberals, liberals are predominately and primarily godless with evangelicals following closely behind. Labels “liberal” and “conservative” should be replaced with the labels “Religious Left” and “Religious Right.” Yes, it is possible to be religious and godless simultaneously, because the god that is worshipped is a false idol god of one’s own creation. Godlessness is simply rebellion against the true biblical God. Evangelicals are as guilty of idolatry as anyone. For the religious left see Ronald H. Nash’s book: Why the Left Is Not Right – The Religious Left: Who They Are and What They Believe.
We can now begin to answer the second fundamental question:

**QUESTION:** What are the ramifications for any secular society?

**FIRST ANSWER:** A secular society is a threat to liberties in general and Christian liberties in particular. Other ramifications also exist. (Reference Appendix D for the details.)

*God who gave us life gave us liberty. And can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the Gift of God?*42 

Thomas Jefferson

**When History Repeats**

Approximately seven hundred years before Christ, the prophet Isaiah’s generation asked God questions that evangelicals are asking God today (See Isaiah chapter 58). They sought God in their worship, fasting, and prayers just as eagerly as evangelicals do today and the ancient Israelites appeared to desire righteous laws just as much. They wanted God’s presence in their worship services just as evangelicals do. They longed for God to come “near,” just as many evangelicals desire another Great Awakening. Yet with all this, they and evangelicals sensed that something was and is seriously wrong. It didn’t make sense. They didn’t know what they were missing. God seemed to be indifferent to their prayers and aloof. God seemed very far away. They didn’t understand why God was not responding. Yet with all their right spiritual practices and desires, their lives were spiritual contradictions just as evangelicals are. Both wondered and asked God, “Why do you not listen to us and respond to our prayers and fasting? Why have we humbled ourselves, and you [God] have not noticed?” (Isaiah 58:3).

So what was their problem and what is our problem? Isaiah’s generation got their answer most likely in a very awkward moment. Considering the context of chapter fifty-eight, it’s very possible God answered their question during what they regarded as a spiritual worship moment that wasn’t.

Imagine the people of God as they were worshipping together in their sanctuary. Everything was in order and in the spirit of ministry. The music was beautiful. Several thousand people were singing. Just as one would naturally think, “Surely God approves of all this and sees us as pleasing to him,” then the prophet Isaiah suddenly bolted into their sanctuary. He was as loud as a battle trumpet and completely out of their order, but not God’s. Walking fast, furious, and straight down the center aisle, Isaiah angrily shouted out God’s message. Clearly, Isaiah was motivated by the same Holy Spirit that would anger Christ in the temple of thieves 700 years later (Matthew 21:13). Both Isaiah and Christ were major interruptions, but this time all eyes were on Isaiah. Quickly and out of sequence, the musicians stop playing. The temple guards began to move toward Isaiah, some with momentary hesitance while looking back to the priest for final directions. The priest was motionlessly fixed in a surprised stare on God’s prophet -- Isaiah.
Now at front and center, Isaiah turned to the congregation and continued his provoked expression of disgust and shouted, “Is not this the kind of fasting I have chosen: to loose the chains of injustice and untie the cords of the yoke, to set the oppressed free and break every yoke?” (See Isaiah 58:6 NIV.)

What was Isaiah’s point? What was God’s point? Everyone recognized that fasting is a spiritual exercise. Yet here Isaiah began to explain that true spirituality included so much more. True spirituality involves opposing wicked public policies and of setting oppressed people free. The people’s apathy toward public policy proved their hearts did not really desire a righteous society as much as they professed.

Move forward to our day. What message of true spirituality and rebuke against injustice would God have Isaiah angrily shout out in our sanctuaries of worship?

“Well, is not this the true worship and spiritual activity that I have chosen for you--that you break the chains of wicked public policies in your educational institutions, that you remove heavy burdens of godless philosophies that oppress and indoctrinate young minds, and that you set the oppressed free to attend any Christian school of their choice? Didn’t I choose you to protect children from being killed in their mother’s womb and at their schools? Is it not to also oppose godless judges that invent their own laws and customs? Is not this the true spirituality activity I have chosen for you?”

Since God’s heart is for righteousness, why were the hearts of God’s people not like the God they thought they were worshiping? This was the spiritual contradiction. Since our righteous God is opposed to political, social, and personal injustice of any kind, why were God’s people so indifferent? Is worship even possible with a heart indifferent and aloof toward God’s heart in any area? How passionate are we towards God’s heart? Now compare all this to the popular evangelical expression of spirituality: We believe a healthy church glorifies God through worship, evangelism, discipleship, ministry service, and godly relationships. Can you see now what is missing? God sees what’s missing – a keen desire to oppose atheistic/agnostic indoctrination on America’s youth among other social/political evils.

“Let those who love the LORD hate evil …” Psalm 97:10a (NIV)

[This Old Testament passage is not just an Old Testament principle restricted to an Old Testament period. The apostle Paul had to publicly challenge Peter’s evil response and obviously this is recorded in the New Testament as a valid New Testament principle. “But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed” apostle Paul – Galatians 2:11 (KJV).] What was Peter’s sin? He was afraid he would offend the legalists, so he compromised (Galatians 2:12). Too many ministers are also guilty of Peter’s sin of being afraid of offending than standing for righteousness. If ministers fail to publicly stand for righteousness, why should anyone else in the public square? Is there anything we should publicly support and/or oppose? Then where are the examples among our leaders?
For Isaiah’s generation and present-day evangelicals, truncated spirituality was and is the problem. Religion and spirituality have become compartmentalized. The God of this spirituality is too small. The real God cares for all of life and wanted His people to respond as well, but they could not because their hearts were not like their God’s. Their major mistake was thinking that spirituality had limited religious application and once a person had performed his or her “spiritual” duty, then that person could proceed with his or her own agenda again. They said they wanted God near, but that was only a small religious god of their limited understanding. Their god was a religious god only. They only wanted God on their own terms to be near. God’s people of the past and evangelicals today share the same problem – worshipping an evangelical idol god and failing to seriously pursue all of God’s heart.

Evangelicals continue to make the same error, even when they think they are not. Consider the second part to Isaiah’s message: “Is it not to share your food with the hungry and to provide the poor wanderer with shelter— when you see the naked, to clothe him, and not to turn away from your own flesh and blood?” Isaiah 58:7 (NIV). Besides worship, prayer and fasting, evangelicals think they now have fulfilled their spiritual duty because they have one more box to check off than Isaiah’s generation – the nurturing ministry box. Many mistakenly think they are pleasing God when they fulfill nurturing needs, but fail to seek God’s heart on all issues. We need a heart after God, in not just loving, but hating what God hates. God loves sinners but hates sin and anything that promotes sin. Now we think we have pleased God because we have been active in the nurturing ministries (Isaiah 58:7), but how can we be pleasing to God when we reject God’s call to the combative ministries as well (Isaiah 58:6)? This is how we are like Isaiah’s rebellious generation. We choose the spirituality we want to obey and ignore God’s heart on everything else. Therefore, we have rejected God’s word just as Hosea said (Hosea 4:6). These are the seeds of godlessness sown among evangelicals, and our leaders are responsible for this general malaise, ignorance, apathy, and truncated out-of-balance spirituality.

The nurturing ministries are always the easiest to fill. No one in the community complains against this response. However, try to seek volunteers for the combative ministries (Isaiah 58:6), and everyone is busy again with their own agendas. In fact the idea of “combative ministries” doesn’t even seem to fit with the evangelical culture that places nurturing as the primary virtue. In reality, the primary virtue is a heart fully after and obedient to God.

It is much easier to form a team of men to travel to another continent for missionary work than it is to assemble a group to pass out leaflets, gather signatures in their own neighborhoods, or write a rebuttal to the editor in the local newspaper. So we attempt to win the world but in the process lose our own children. How spiritual or benevolent is that?
Dr. Robert Lewis, pastor of Fellowship Bible Church in Little Rock, Arkansas, reported of a community event of over 100 churches and more than 3,000 volunteers that helped to renovate and refurbish twenty-six central Arkansas public schools involving $400,000 of manpower and materials. A group of men from Promise Keepers also decided once to paint and renovate a public school in the Washington D.C. area. These are all great ideas to catch the community’s attention of Christian men and women in action. But if this is all we do, who are we really trying to impress? Did anyone ever wonder how the Holy Spirit looked at such actions to make humanistic indoctrination centers nicer with no opposition to such indoctrination in those classrooms? This is feminized Christianity and completely out of balance. “Spirituality” contextualized as nurturing only is truncated spirituality and grievous to God. Dr. Lewis is correct to teach that irresistible influence comes from a church that is vitally connected to God, each other, and the world around us. His book, The Church of Irresistible Influence, contains wonderful needed examples of Christians connecting with each other and the world around them. Unfortunately, it is seriously out of balance in that only nurturing ministries are mentioned. Not a single combative ministry (Isaiah 58:6) was illustrated in his book. The connection to God’s full agenda is in serious question. The real damage is that it leaves a false sense that nurturing-only evangelicals are God pleasing and sufficient to avoid God’s judgment.

It’s easy to get connection to a community where everyone is smiling. It would be easier to see their connection to Christ had they followed Christ’s example of nurturing gracious words with challenging admonitions (Luke 4:22-29). After all their good work in the community, how willing are they to challenge the humanistic indoctrination in the schools they had just renovated? Would these churches also be willing to place “Evolution, in part, is a theory that should be critically considered with an open mind” labels in textbooks? It’s moments like this the community stops smiling and shows their gritting teeth instead. Peter also felt the same pressure to deny Christ when the godless pressure of this world was turned on him (Matthew 26:69-74).

The question still remains, after all the typical evangelical nurturing responses, will evangelicals ever desire to model all of God’s heart, even God’s heart of justice, in their private and public lives? To be sensitive to all of God’s Word and the Holy Spirit’s prompting, but resistant on one point will still be judged by God as pure rebellion and earn God’s judgment.

The apostle Paul agreed that true spirituality and real worship is something that is very practical, involving bodies and minds in our everyday world.

1Therefore, I urge you, brothers, in view of God’s mercy, to offer your bodies as living sacrifices, holy and pleasing to God—this is your spiritual act of worship. 2Do not conform any longer to the pattern of this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind. Then you will be able to test and approve what God’s will is—his good, pleasing and perfect will” Romans 12:1-2 (NIV).

In response to Paul’s writing, the early Roman Christians gave their bodies in service and martyrdom. This was true spiritual worship.
According to Jesus, we are the preserving element in society and God gives us the choice to win or lose here by how salty we choose to be. Unlike the nice, nurturing ministries, salt can be a real irritant. This also explains the pressure that promotes our fears to minimize our Christian influence in a very hostile world. The Roman Christians felt the same temptation to compromise. Did you ever wonder what it will be like on Judgment Day when those who feared losing their tax-exemption status or offending someone will stand next to Christians who did not surrender to their fears, but lost their lives in the Roman Coliseum for their testimony and belief in Christ? Their public civil statement of Christian protest was simple--Jesus was God, not Caesar.

“You are the salt of the earth. But if the salt loses its saltiness, how can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, except to be thrown out and trampled by men.”

Jesus the Christ in Matthew 5:13 (NIV)

The objection could be raised, “Oh but evangelicals have already been involved with politics with little results to show.”

Evangelicals have been involved with politics like a couple of Boy Scouts in a leaking, sinking canoe. We have been busy bailing the waters of abortion, euthanasia, gay rights, etc. out of our social canoe while doing absolutely nothing to plug the hole that would keep back the humanistic flood waters from our youth. Godlessness is the foundational basis of our social evils. Evangelicals have been busy with the symptoms of all our social ills while ignoring the primary cause of social decadence, which is the indoctrination and inculcation of atheism, agnosticism, and humanism at taxpayer expense in our government schools. Why are we so silent on the primary public policy of godless influence? Why don’t we fight for school choice via vouchers and tuition tax credits that would enable all families to choose a godly education?

Dr. Francis Schaeffer explained evangelical ineffectiveness in the same theme. Speaking two years before his death, he said that “the worldview of matter and energy shaped by blind chance has dominated our government and courts. It gives no meaning to life, no value system, and no basis for law, but rather leaves man’s judgment as the center of law, morality, values, and ethics.”

The humanistic worldview leaves man as the measure of all things. Schaeffer said that Christians have mistakenly seen the evils of our society (abortion, euthanasia, pornography, breakdown of the family, drugs, gang violence, etc.) as isolated bits and pieces and have failed to see these social ills are in reality all connected as a natural outcome of this humanistic worldview. Schaeffer explained, “There is no way to heal the relativistic thinking of our age if indeed all there is out there is a universe of random matter and energy that is silent about values.”

This then implies that evangelicals could be much more effective, if they focus their political energies in not just opposing evil sinful practices, but adopting policies that would stop the massive humanistic evangelism of America’s youth. This humanistic influence can be opposed via school choice, tuition tax credits, and alternative schools via benevolent scholarships. This will give people a choice. There are other options too.
A Possible Objection

The growth of Christianity in communist China is sometimes an argument given to show that harsh political policies will not impede Christ’s church. While persecution has a means of separating out the hypocrites, it also hinders the propagation of the gospel. The free democratic countries are sending missionaries and publishing Christian resources, not communist China. We have every reason to believe that there could be more Christians in China today if the harsh persecution against Chinese Christians had not existed. Holy Scriptures are clear—a person or environment can hinder or promote godliness (Joshua 22:25, Isaiah 9:16, Matthew 13:20-21, 15:6; 18:6, Luke 18:16, 22:31-34, Acts 18:27-28, Romans 10:14, 1 Corinthians 8:11-13, 1 Peter 5:8). The apostle Paul left us with the idea that a believer could be disobedient and thus held accountable by God for evangelistic failures. 26-“Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.” 27-“For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.” (Acts 20:26-27 KJV) This also connects to Ezekiel’s warning in Ezekiel 33:6-8

Non-Political Options

Ben Stein’s movie Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed was released in the summer of 2008 in over a thousand theaters across the U.S. It’s now available on DVD, but one wonders for how much longer, considering the economic pressure on the producer. (See www.Go2RPI.com and then search for Expelled.) This is an excellent movie that shows the atheistic-biased instruction that has become prevalent in our politically correct science classrooms. Ben Stein interviewed various scientific participants on both sides of the origins debate. Anyone who saw this movie could easily perceive that significant scientific information on origin issues has been systematically censored and expelled from the general public’s consideration by individuals that favored an atheistic philosophy. Secularists who saw this movie could easily come to the conclusion that their worldviews are preprogrammed, and therefore, they are not the freethinkers they perceive themselves to be. Secularists, who will never step inside a church, could have easily received this message in their local theater if only Christians had told them.

When this movie was released to the theaters, I made an attempt to tell as many evangelical pastors in my city as I possibly could. Some were receptive, but the response I got from others was indicative that they did not realize the pre-evangelistic opportunity that was before them. I was simply asking them to briefly let their congregations know of the upcoming movie and to help encourage our community to see it.

One minister replied, “I’m only called to preach the gospel” and added “Besides, Ben Stein is Jewish.” (I later thought…Weren’t Jesus and the apostles Jewish too? Did it ever cross this minister’s mind that it is necessary to plow the hard secular ground first in preparation for sowing spiritual seeds?)

At another church, secular university students parked their cars in its lot during the week. Movie fliers were distributed on them, by placing them under the windshield wiper blades. A neighbor across the street from the church complained to the pastor that these
fliers could blow into his yard. Instead of reassuring his neighbor that his youth or the church’s janitor will clean his yard, the neighbor later reported that the pastor personally removed all the fliers from the cars. The pastor could have instead reassured his neighbor that he will pick up of any spare flyers in the man’s yard. It’s highly likely that the minister would not have needed to pick up as many as he removed from the cars. Yet, by removing the flyers, if this neighbor is reporting honestly, the minister participated in the subtle censorship on the origin issues. This is how the ministry of nurturing is in reality not a virtue, but a vice. It’s disguised rebellion against God because it seeks man’s approval over God’s and consequently will reap God’s judgment.

Two Christian bookstores were asked to display the movie posters. Despite the fact that sufficient front window space was available and other posters were displayed, the movie flyers were to be posted in a remote corner in the back of both stores. One wonders how their priority for profit compares to God’s plan of liberating souls stuck in humanistic indoctrinating centers, we call public schools. Could they even be open to the leading of the Holy Spirit if it was against company policy for profit?

A friend went to one theater and then later told me, “Not many people were there to see the movie. You should have got the word out.” I didn’t tell him that I personally passed out over a thousand fliers at my own expense in a community of about 500,000. What did you do?

Then later the Expelled DVDs were noticed on a local Sam’s Club DVD display shelf for about three weeks before they were removed. Did evangelicals notice the subtle censorship or signs of protests in other stores? In the meantime Premise Media Corporation, the producer, had to file for bankruptcy. We can now begin to provide an answer to the third fundamental question.

**QUESTION:** How have evangelicals contributed to our godless society?

**ANSWER:** We have ignored God’s Word that commands direct involvement on social-political public policies and issues. We have failed to remove the binding humanistic yoke of atheistic/agnostic indoctrination on children. We resist participating in the fight for school choice and academic freedom for all teachers and students. We have failed to become personally involved to “establish justice in our gates.” We have also been naive participants in the subtle censorship taking place in our society by our ignorance and misplaced priorities. We have placed nurturing the opinions of men over obedience to God. Not wanting to offend men, we have failed to boldly stand for righteous issues and thus have offended God both inside and outside our churches. We have failed to inform our congregations and the general public. We have permitted atheism and agnosticism to be the established uncontested secular religions in our government schools. Consequently, this is the growing ethos in our ever increasing secular culture. We fail to understand the significance and extent of humanistic indoctrination of our youth. Our main sin is we care more for our agenda of profits and pleasures than for God’s will. Should we be surprised when we begin to lose our able to make profit? Bound by traditions, we grieve the Holy Spirit and thus are not led by the Holy Spirit on these
issues. We only have ourselves to blame. Unfortunately, there are more evangelical sins to repent of.

In the Preface of *Living Prophecies – The Minor Prophets Paraphrased with Daniel and The Revelation*, the editors of Tyndale House, Publishers wrote: “Yet in these days of endless national wealth and materialism, of rising crime, bribery, divorce, drunkenness, dishonesty, murder, adultery, and general disregard for God—these are the days for reading the ancient prophets. For they lived in the same atmosphere of personal, national, and international arrogance against the God of heaven—of disregard and willful ignorance of Him—as we do today. Simply because these prophets were not heeded, centuries of anguish overtook the Jewish race, and an entire generation of neighboring nations disappeared from history.” These editors ask: “Can we expect a better fate than they?”

Consequently, evangelicals shouldn’t be surprised of an economic depression or international conflicts in our time. We do not have the blessings of God on us or our nation.

**Why Evangelicals are guilty:**

Darrell Scott (Rachel’s father - Rachel was the first Columbine student murdered.) was invited to address the United States House of Representatives Judiciary Committee, Subcommittee on School Violence, May 27, 1999. He wrote the following poem and then read it to them:

*Your laws ignore our deepest needs,*
*Your words are empty air,*
*You’ve stripped away our heritage,*
*You’ve outlawed simple prayer.*
*Now gunshots fill our classrooms,*
*And precious children die.*

*You seek for answers everywhere,*
*And ask the question “Why?”*
*You regulate restrictive laws,*
*Through legislative creed.*
*And yet you fail to understand,*
*That God is what we need!*

by Darrell Scott

Unfortunately, Mr. Scott is like many evangelicals. We blame Congress for our mistakes. Ken Connor and John Revell reported in *Sinful Silence*: “According to statistics, over the last thirty years on average less than half of the eligible voters in this nation voted in general election. Even more alarming are statistics that indicate the percentages are about the same—and perhaps even less—for those who call themselves Christians.” You can be sure that even less evangelicals participated in supporting or defeating a proposition or candidate by volunteering or giving. Since we have abdicated our God-given responsibility to vote and effect the political process through volunteering and giving, we have created a vacuum that extreme godless humanists (who are in the minority now, but this is quickly changing) were and are more than happy to fill. By this process they are changing our customs and laws as we silently watch. It was the wise King Solomon who said, “The first to present his case seems right, till another comes forward and questions him” (Proverbs 18:17 NIV). Since the atheistic and agnostic
humanists have been the first to present their case to voters and we have failed to be the second party to come forward and question their public policies, why should the unsuspecting public question what at first seems right? If Congress is bad blame us – we the people. But especially blame evangelicals for failing to give Mr. Average any reason to participate in the election process or to question humanistic policies. If we do our homework, we could motivate Mr. Average to vote against increasing judicial tyranny, against added state controls, for school choice, and for academic freedom as a means of protecting his rights and ours. But this requires prayer, God-given wisdom, personal sacrifice in the political process and courage to stand against the opposition that will exist even in our sanctuaries of worship.

We think we have religious freedom simply because we can “worship” in our sealed houses of worship. Evangelicals need to wake up. We think we have religious freedom simply because no one bothers us in our religious seclusions. Those with real religious freedom are those free to pass their beliefs to children unhampered. Only religious humanists have this kind of freedom. Atheistic evangelism is supported by taxpayers and public policy. It thus has unlimited access to all children while Christians have no such freedom of expression for their religious views. Considering the hours children are in school and how busy the parents are, the humanists have much more influence on children than the parents have. Our religious freedom has passed, and it’s time we were honest about it.

Our perfect, righteous God warned the New Testament church in Sardis. Evangelicals too need to be awakened to God’s heart, repent, and then obey. God is no respecter of persons, we too will be judged severely for any apathy towards God’s righteous heart.

1 To the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead. 2 Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have not found your deeds complete in the sight of my God. 3 Remember, therefore, what you have received and heard; obey it, and repent. But if you do not wake up, I will come like a thief, and you will not know at what time I will come to you. 4 Yet you have a few people in Sardis who have not soiled their clothes. They will walk with me, dressed in white, for they are worthy. 5 He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels. 6 He who has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.”

Jesus the Christ - Revelation 3:1-6 (NIV)

What should Bill and Irene do?

They should exercise spiritual maturity like the men of Issachar (1 Chronicles 12:32) and become informed of wicked political/social policies, they should understand the remedies, and then help to inform others. They could begin by simply sharing and showing the recommended DVDs with family, friends, and neighbors. The DVDs in this book are outstanding resources toward this goal. Ignorance and fear are Satan’s most
effective weapons. The failure to accurately perceive one’s spiritual condition is similar to the failure to perceive Satan’s schemes. Both have the potential of damning souls and receiving judgment from God for disobedience (Luke 12:47-48).

“See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world rather than on Christ.”

Apostle Paul - Colossians 2:8 (NIV)

“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.” Apostle Peter - 1 Peter 5:8 (KJV)

“15 Be very careful, then, how you live—not as unwise but as wise, 16 making the most of every opportunity, because the days are evil. 17 Therefore do not be foolish, but understand what the Lord’s will is.” Apostle Paul - Ephesians 5:15-17 (NIV)

If Bill and Irene only have time to read one book, they must read Sinful Silence – When Christians Neglect Their Civic Duty by Ken Connor and John Revell. See Resources below. This book explains very well why we do not have God’s blessings on our land, our churches, and in our families. America is challenged with crime and economic problems. Their book also explains why much of what we do in church is a waste of time. Ken and John warn, “[A]s we have gradually turned our backs on God’s priorities in these areas, we should not be surprised if God has turned a deaf ear to our prayers…. [W]hile neglecting God’s civil expectations may not be the only problem in U.S. churches today, the evidence is undeniable—this is a major stumbling block that must be removed if we hope to ever see revival in our land. Furthermore, based on the biblical record, if we don’t deal with the issue, we need not look for God to receive our worship and prayers warmly, especially prayers for national deliverance and protection.”

Bill and Irene could give on a consistent basis to a Christian legal or school choice promoting political organization. (See legal ministry options at the end of this chapter and school choice political organizations at the end of Chapter 9.)

Bill and Irene could tell other Christians what they have learned and begin to pray for God’s wisdom and guidance in this important struggle for America’s youth and future.

Bill and Irene could volunteer to review and comment on textbooks. Include friends to help. For forty-three years Mel and Norma Gabler were dedicated Christians who worked without pay for the best possible public school textbooks for children. Now that they are with the Lord, who will stand in their place and see that textbooks do not destroy our heritage, society, and children? If they cannot get the books changed, maybe billboards could advertise web-based resources to show textbook errors. Cal Thomas’ book: Book Burning reported that schools have gradually censored “practically all books which uphold, promote or teach the basic values upon which our nation was founded” (page 57). Mr. Thomas also admitted that “Not every state has such an open textbook [review] policy as Texas [where the Gablers worked]; most parents cannot [are not
permitted to submit critiques of every textbook even if they had the time or wanted to” (page 57). So we operate with the delusion that we are a free people and that our schools are “public.” These are atheistic government schools.

Mel and Norma Gabler’s organization is called Educational Research Analysis. PO Box 7518, Longview, TX, 75607, (903) 753-5993 Email: info@textbookreviews.org Website: www.textbookreviews.org

Suggested Scripture Reading:

Social and political reasons God doesn’t answer prayer: Isaiah 58; Daniel 4:27; Amos 2:6-8; 3:10-11; 5:12-17; 6:1-7; Micah 7:1-7; Zechariah 7:8-14


Resources:

DVDs:
1) Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed
   Video URL: http://www.imdb.com/video/screenplay/vi2707752729/
   Go to www.Go2RPI.com or call Randolf Productions Inc. at 1-800-266-7741 for very reasonable bulk discount DVD pricing. Unfortunately the www.expelledthemovie.com domain name has expired. However, YouTube has outstanding Expelled movie clips. Go to YouTube and then search for the titles below:

To see the movie trailer search for Expelled: No Intelligence Allowed (Super Trailer) or go to: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xGCxbhGaVfE

Richard Dawkins seemingly is not against intelligent design as a scientific hypothesis per se, just the idea of God. Ben Stein answered the popular atheistic question Dawkins raised: “God, why did you take such pains to hide yourself?” Search for Ben Stein vs. Richard Dawkins or go to:

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9M_ZF8r5e7w

2) Icons of Evolution. Source: www.discovery.org or www.Go2RPI.com
   This DVD reviews some of the public lynching Roger DeHart had to face because of his skepticism of Darwinism. There is a book by this title as well, written by Jonathan Wells. The book is very layperson readable and easily shows much of the problems in evolution that are not taught.

Books:
   This is a “must read” for every Christian who does not wish to see our nation sink any further into the mire of godlessness.
   D. James Kennedy, The Late Pastor of Coral Ridge Presbyterian Church
2) Why You Can’t Stay Silent, A Biblical Mandate to Shape Our Culture, Tom Minnery
   Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Wheaton, Illinois

   Tom Minnery makes a strong, biblically-based case that Christians are mandated by
   the Gospel to speak up and step out… This book will challenge any preconceived
   ideas you may have that Christianity and political involvement do not mix.
   Don Wildmon, President American Family Association

3) Politics -- According to the Bible, Wayne Grudem Ph.D. Zondervan, 2010
   This can be a wonderful resource as we face growing tensions from an ever more
   powerful state. Chuck Colson, Founder, Prison Fellowship

4) Slaughter of the Dissidents, Volume 1
   - The Shocking Truth about Killing the Careers of Darwin Doubter, Dr. Jerry Bergman
   Published by: Leafcutter Press   www.slaughterofthedissidents.com

   He [Dr. Bergman] has proved beyond question that true Christianity in general, and
   supernatural creation in particular, are under nationwide bigoted attack by our leading
   educators, our news media, our courts and practically our whole intellectual
   establishment. All Christians, and conservative non-Christians as well, need to become
   aware of this situation and would be well advised to read this book.
   Henry M. Morris, Founder of the Institute for Creation Research

5) Uncommon Dissent – Intellectuals Who Find Darwinism Unconvincing,
   Editor: William A. Dembski
   Published by: ISI Books, Wilmington, Delaware

   [A] collection of very smart essays…These men and women make their case with high-
   quality intellection and argument. Lionel Tiger, New York Sun

6) Darwinism, Design and Public Education,
   Edited by John Angus Campbell & Stephen C. Meyer
   Michigan State University Press, East Lansing

   Those unfamiliar with basic concepts in evolutionary biology and genetics will find
   lucid and interesting expositions. Even those who already hold strong opinions on the
   issue (and I count myself in that group, as a committed scientific secularist) will value
   the opportunity to hear the strongest arguments by highly skilled advocates and
   opposing views and methods. James Arnt Aune, Texas A&M University

7) Book Burning, Cal Thomas
   Crossway Books, Westchester, Illinois – A Division of Good News Publishers

   The full story of how the religious and politically conservative point of view… is being
   systematically suppressed by those who, masquerading as ‘Pluralists,’ wish to establish
   atheistic secular humanism as the new national religion.

8) Education as Religious War, Book 5:
   Who Owns the Children? – Compulsory Education and the Dilemma of Ultimate Authority,
   Blair Adams and Joel Stein, Truth Forum, Grand Junction, Colorado
Websites for Politically Active Christians and Traditional Family Values:
1) www.academicfreedompition.com
2) www.americanvision.org
3) www.breakpoint.org
4) www.citizenlink.org
5) http://www.moodyradio.org/inthemarketwithjanetparshall/
6) http://www.colsoncenter.org/wfp-home
7) www.cwa.org
8) www.eagleforum.org
9) http://www.renewamerica.com
10) www.saveAmerica.com – Campaign for Children and Families
11) www.saveCalifornia.com - Campaign for Children and Families
12) http://www.wilberforcecentral.org/wfc/Coalition/index.htm#WF
13) www.patriotacademy.com
14) http://www.moodyradio.org/inthemarketwithjanetparshall
15) http://conservativechronicle.com
16) The Heritage Foundation  http://www.heritage.org
17) www.townhall.com

Christian Legal & Apologetic Organizations willing to defend Christian Liberties:
1) Alliance Defense Fund, 15100 N 90th Street, Scottsdale, AZ 85260
   Phone:1-800-TELL-ADF, Website: www.alliancedefensefund.org
   (www.TellADF.org and look for Student Rights)
2) American Center for Law and Justice, PO Box 90555, Washington, DC 20090-0555, Phone: 1-800-296-4529, Website: www.aclj.org
3) Christian Law Association, PO Box 4010 Seminole, Fl 33775, 727-399-8300
   Email: info@christianlaw.org  Website: www.ChristianLaw.org
4) Christian Legal Society, 8001 Braddock Road, Suite 300, Springfield, VA 22151,
   Phone: (703) 642-1070, Website: www.clsnet.org
5) Discovery Institute, 208 Columbia Street, Seattle, WA 98104
   Phone: (206) 292-0401  Website: www.discovery.org
6) Rutherford Institute, PO Box 7482, Charlottesville, VA 22906-7482
   Phone: (434) 978-3888  Website: www.rutherford.org
   Email: staff@rutherford.org
Chapter 4: Profound Secondary Effects of Humanistic Education and the Cry of God’s Heart

Brooks Brown, a past Columbine student wrote, “If you did a class project, you had to safeguard it from kids who might smash it when your back was turned. When kids smacked each other in the back of the head during class, the teacher would look the other way. Once kids realized that discipline in CHIPS (Challenging High Intellectual Potential Students) was nonexistent, they went wild.” Brooks provided other similar examples of teachers failing to administer discipline.

Brooks added, “I knew them [Eric and Dylan] far better than Principal DeAngelis, who behind his tears and speeches had no time for the kids like us, who existed outside the norm and were punished daily by our peers because of it.”

Brooks tells another incident where one kid kicked him “square in the crotch.” He fell to the ground, and another friend came to his defense. All three told the same story, but that didn’t matter. All three were punished, and the defender got the bigger suspension.

What is happening here? The reader needs to understand that everyone lives by their personal philosophy even when they are unaware of what exactly that philosophy is. Humanistic teachers live by their philosophy too. That philosophy incorporates ideas of
relativism. There are no absolutes. There is no “good” vs. “evil; “right” vs. “wrong.” Everything is relative. That makes discipline easy for them. No value judgments need to be made. Just simply punish everyone. Thereby, the group will learn through a process of punishments and rewards what the expected behavior outcomes should be for survival. However, if it is perceived that a student disagrees with any element of a teacher’s personal philosophy, then simply increase the punishment to discourage the disagreement for that student. It’s very likely the defender Brooks identified was the leader in challenging the teacher and thus the reason for his “bigger suspension.”

Brooks also told of other antagonistic situations. “Sometimes kids would just ignore us. But often, we were targets. We were freshmen, and computer-geek freshmen at that. At lunchtime the jocks [athletes] would kick our chairs, or push us down onto the table from behind. They would knock our food trays onto the floor, trip us, or throw food as we were walking by. When we sat down, they would pelt us with candy from another table. In the hallways, they would push kids into lockers and call them names while their friends stood by and laughed at the show. In gym class, they would beat kids up in the locker room because the teachers weren’t around.

Seniors at Columbine would do things like pour baby oil on the floor, then literally ‘go bowling’ with freshmen; they would throw the kid across the floor, and since he couldn’t stop, he’d crash right into other kids while the jocks pointed and giggled. The administration finally put a stop to it after a freshman girl slipped and broke her arm.

One guy, a wrestler who everyone knew to avoid, liked to make kids get down on the ground and push pennies along the floor with their noses. This would happen during school hours, as kids were passing from one class to another. Teachers would see it and look the other way. ‘Boys will be boys,’ they’d say, and laugh.”

The natural human response to this was recorded three thousand years ago by King Solomon.

“When the sentence for a crime is not quickly carried out, the hearts of the people are filled with schemes to do wrong.” Solomon - Ecclesiastes 8:11 (NIV)

Because the teachers operated by their humanistic philosophy, Eric and Dylan’s hearts were filled with schemes to do wrong. This is not a new or isolated incident. I specifically remember publicly challenging my fifth grade teacher over forty-five years ago for not being fair because she punished the whole class because of one rebellious student. She had no answer. Some teachers avoid implementing discipline directly, hoping the rebellious students are disciplined by their peers instead via peer pressure and scorn from their fellow students. This will not work. Both rebellious students and teachers will be seen as enemies in their students’ eyes.

Clifford Cobb stated in Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities that “…mere physical proximity to those who are different breeds contempt as often as respect.” In building respect for each other, something more must be done than simply bringing students into
close association together. William Bennett (Catholic) noted the educrates' (education bureaucrats) contempt for evangelicals when he said, “I have no doubt that the real irritation of those on the religious right is not that their particular creed is not embraced by the schools, but that often their creed is the only one singled out for contempt.” If any of these teachers are respected by their students, such attitudes and values against evangelicals will be transmitted to their students. We need to fully realize that our public schools are not value-neutral and are far from being an antidote against tribalism. Should we be surprised when some students express intolerance toward evangelicals just as some of their teachers have? In Paducah, Kentucky, a student open fired on students praying. Three girls were killed, another was paralyzed from the waist down, and four other students were wounded. The parents of these children probably had no idea of the contempt against evangelicals that existed in their children’s school.

Can we truly expect students to accept those with different views if their teachers don’t model it for them? Amazingly, it’s still believed that public schools are the great equalizer in helping different and various groups of people learn to live together. One of the Columbine killers pointed his gun at Cassie Bernall and asked, “Do you believe in God?” She paused and said, “Yes, I believe in God.” The gunman asked her “Why?” and then shot her in the head.[A]

It’s absolutely amazing to sense the lack of discernment among public school favoring parents and ministers that fail to sense the spiritual, mental, emotional and physical dangers in our humanistic and relativistic government schools. If Eric Harris or Dylan Klebold’s parents had another chance, would they elect a school choice policy that would be more meaningful to them and their children? Do the families that lost children still want to force children together that scorn and persecute each other over various differences each value?

**Some Reasons For and Against School Choice**

Without a meaningful school choice that includes private independent schools, government schools have no incentive to listen to any parent. Imagine the government taking control of General Motors and then forcing citizens to buy cars from General Motors. What incentive would General Motors have to improve automobiles and compete for customers? This is the model of our government schools and explains why resolutions to school problems continue to be illusive to solutions year after year. Yes, private industries have problems, but government forced monopolies are worse. William Bennett, Secretary of Education under President Reagan, said, “There’s actually a perverse incentive [for schools] not to succeed, because if a school district performs

---

[A] The ballistics report indicated that Cassie's killer was Eric Harris. His autopsy report stated: “Harris was wearing a white T-shirt with the inscription 'Natural Selection' on its front.” Obviously, Harris was a Darwinist that believed in helping the evolutionary process by killing those he thought were stupid evangelicals. Natural selection selects against those that are too stupid and thus not fit to survive. From Harris’ apparent perspective, he was simply accelerating the natural process anyway. See Appendix C) The Columbine God Question – Why it’s Debated and the Ramifications.
poorly, it usually gets more money based on the argument that it’s doing poorly because it lacks money.”

The teachers’ union is very aware that it is not by teaching but by political power that they win benefits.

“Albert Shanker, president of the American Federation of Teachers (AFT), has stated publicly that ‘We have a Soviet system of education in this country.’ Please note that that observation is made by the head of a union.”

Interestingly this same Al Shanker has also said, “When school children start paying union dues, that’s when I’ll start representing the interest of school children.”

The National Education Association (NEA) agrees with the AFT’s philosophy of union benefits over the education of children and has stated: “The major purpose of our association is not the education of children; it is or ought to be the extension and/or preservation of our members’ rights.”

Whenever school choice policy is debated, the NEA and AFT often raise the potential of “tribalism.” Tribalism is intended to express the idea that if we allow different groups of people to go off and start their own schools, then prejudice and racial problems will resurface in our society. The mistaken belief is that simply integrating people together will solve all these problems of the heart. If this were so true, then the public schools should be prime examples of salvation to this age old problem of clicks among people. We have never been more racially integrated than today, yet social problems in our communities and violence in our schools have skyrocketed off the social graphs. America is experiencing more social problems than ever before. School choice proposals today include laws that prohibit selection based upon race. If it’s not obvious now, it should be in the next chapter that atheistic humanism not only has no workable social solutions, atheistic humanism is a catalyst for more social problems than is typically perceived.

An often unrecognized benefit school choice offers is the potential for children to gather around a common theme, philosophy, culture, or interests that they readily identify with. It could even be as simple as computers, art, music, science, or athletics. Apparently the Columbine culture was saturated in athletics and interschool competition. This is not exactly the best culture or community for those that value technological brains over physical brawns, as Eric and Dylan apparently did. Even though special interest clubs can be formed to attract such students at any school, there is always the potential for these inner groups to persecute each other because of the different values each hold. If on the other hand, these groups were separated and allowed to excel in their special talents, such hard feelings between the different interest groups could just as well be avoided altogether.

There are multiple reasons why school choice policies have failed at the voting booths. However, the following five are the main impediments:
• The well-funded and very politically organized and active teachers’ unions will stop at noting to spread fear, misinformation, and lies among voters to avoid competing for educational dollars with the private independent schools.

• Ignorance, apathy, lack of political organization, and funds to oppose the teachers’ union are real impediments for school reform. The number of volunteers and dollars for the policies in favor of alternative educational plans are dwarfed by ten times or more when compared to the teachers union’s dollars and political active members.

• Some private independent schools fear state controls if government funds are accepted and thus are very hesitant to join in the political fray for what they perceive as a questionable right to state/federal funds. (Chapters 9 and 10 responses to this concern.) In the meantime, remember Israel’s original fear on entering into the Promised Land (Numbers chapters 13-14). Many Christians are just as fearful of the giants of state controls despite the promised land of school choice.

• While the general public recognizes that a school choice proposal could be beneficial for those other kids stuck in under-performing schools, the thought that such a revolution in educational funding might have the potential of draining funds from their nice local neighborhood schools is absolutely unbearable. Others simply and selfishly want their and others’ tax dollars in their school, no matter the consequences.

• Many private school parents are reluctant to support vouchers because they believe government controls will follow government money. They have a point. However, factors exist that could limit government controls if we have the courage and will to put them in our federal and state constitutions, public offices, and courts.

Let’s first start with the unconditional supporters of public schools. Many overlook the fact that good neighborhood schools do not lose funds. Good schools are always in demand. School choice can make these even better, by providing real economic incentives for teachers and administrators to listen to parents. Many are probably simply saying “my school is good enough for me, and I don’t want to even gamble with school funding at all.” Other voters say, “I want my and your tax dollars in my school.” The problems with this assessment are the lessons from Columbine and other school conflicts

[B] The Association of Christian Schools International (P.O. Box 4097, Whittier, CA 90607-4097, 213-694-4791) published a flyer titled “Stop Lying!” It was directed to the California Teachers Association during the school choice battle in the early 90s. It is a well documented piece showing CTA’s deliberate deceptions. See Thomas Sowell’s article: “Teachers tell big lies about school vouchers,” Conservative Chronicle, 10/27/93. See also professor Howard Fuller of Marquette University paper titled: “The Saturation Campaign of Lies and Distortions About Vouchers” (Go to www.schoolchoiceinfo.org/After the home page opens add /servlets.SendArticle/20/satualTL.pdf at the end of the URL address to secure this document.
that force us to take another look. Do we really want to force kids together into the same non-responsive, humanistic government school model? This model breeds conflict and death and hides problems from the parents.

Voters really need to consider how their votes affect students in other poor-performing districts for other reasons. If these kids are prohibited from moving to a better school with the choice of godly values, better academics, and thus a better future (James 5:20), then the probability increases for these same kids to move into a life of crime that could affect the original selfish voters and their families. “We will all reap what we have sown” (Galatians 6:7). If voters have sown hardships into the lives of others, should they be surprised if hardships ricochet back into their own lives via the increase in crime on them and their families? We will investigate this in the next chapter.

### The Issue of State Controls

One who has studied this issue carefully is Clifford Cobb. He admits, “Many Americans who favor independent schools are fearful that a voucher system will bring increased regulation of sectarian education in its wake. The history of state support of Catholic schools in France suggests that the threat is real if the proponents of truly independent schools are not strong enough to win a clear victory over those who insist on government regulation and control. Where the political will exist, however, the problem can be solved by amending state constitutions to limit the power of the state legislatures to regulate nongovernment schools.”

Private, independent schools, and homeschoolers have legitimate concerns of potential state controls associated with vouchers. Because of this, vouchers should never be direct institutional subsidies, but scholarship initiatives, like the GI Bill. Yet concerns over the potential of state controls should also be matched against the ever-growing political power of the very left leaning, socialistic, and humanistic-favoring NEA. School choice via scholarship vouchers has the potential of removing much of this political power from the NEA. Private schools have no need for teacher unions. As the public begins to favor American independent schools over government schools, the NEA political machinery could be defunded and diminished. As the NEA political power diminishes, Americans could see new opportunities to take back the courts and legislatures from the liberal elites as well.

In a letter addressed to me, dated May 10, 1993, Burt Carney from the Association of Christian Schools International (ACSI), wrote: “In my position as Coordinator for State Legislative Issues, I monitor legislation by computer for all 50 states including at least 30 school choice, voucher, and tax credit bills this spring. The CA [California] voucher initiative is probably the best written of the entire group.” This would have been Proposition 174 – The Parental Choice in Education Initiative.

---

[C] This doesn’t mean that new schools need to be built. (Only when FedEx is not criminally prosecuted for putting mail in your mail box, will the United States Postal Service have real competitive pressure and reasons to improve and decrease cost. The same economic factors of added competition are needed to improve our government schools too.)
The ACSI “Legal Legislative Update,” November 1991, reported that “When the Legal / Legislative Committee reviewed the final version of the initiative, it unanimously voted to recommend that California [private/Christian] schools support the measure.”

If Proposition 174 – The Parental Choice in Education Amendment – had passed in California there would have been added protections in place that would have prohibited additional state controls on private and independent schools even with the scholarship voucher. This is because California’s constitution would have been amended to add restrictions to added controls. The California legislature would have needed a three-fourth vote agreement for added controls on private and independent schools. (No additional state regulations could have been added beyond those in effect since October, 1991, without a ¾ vote of the Legislature.) Also, a simple majority of registered voters would also have to concur with the changes. This alone could have been the brick wall of protection around private schools as approximately 50 percent of registered voters fail to vote at all. Because Proposition 174 did not pass, only a simple majority in the Legislature is needed to add state controls on these schools now. This is much easier to do. This simple fact should be integrated with the information in Chapter 9 to fully understand the growing threat of state controls. It shows where we are headed. Proposition 174 should have been a major concern to all Christians worried about added state controls for private schools, especially in our increasing secular culture with anti-Christian political philosophies. State controls are coming because Christians failed to put the added impediments in place to block the NEA’s anti-god, anti-traditional religion goals as stated in their public resolutions.

The NEA resolutions, which are adopted yearly, confirm their agenda. Go to http://www.nea.org. Select “Resolutions,” then do a search on “home schooling.” The NEA’s agenda is to destroy home schools and all religious schools despite their academic successes. The NEA resolution reads: Instruction should be by persons who are licensed by the appropriate state education licensure agency, and a curriculum approved by the state department of education should be used. There is no question that the very humanistic NEA looks forward to the day when they can shut down all schools that do not comply with their godless secular agenda. This has nothing to do with academics. This has everything to do with a ruling state endorsed philosophy of atheism and agnosticism. We are in a religious cultural war whether we believe it or not.

Clifford Cobb also noted, “Many proponents of tax credits naively imagine that the use of the tax mechanism (rather than a voucher system) would prevent government involvement in the operation of nongovernment schools. But a state legislature would still be able to impose its chosen restrictions by narrowly or broadly defining the nature of expenditures for the credit.” Considering we are already involved in a cultural war with the secularists camp is growing, it’s only a matter of time before we lose again. To get tied up on the mechanics of funding and fail to focus on the increasing proponents of atheism is a serious mistake.

People also need to recognize that profound legal differences and ramifications exist between direct institutional subsides and scholarship vouchers that go to the child. The
GI Bill helped GIs become priest and ministers without added state controls. Yet with secular opposition increasing, evangelicals need to get serious with their apologetics and politics. The price of liberty will always be eternal vigilance with or without vouchers.

The Rutherford Institute also approved of California’s Educational Freedom Amendment. In a letter from Brad W. Dacus, Esq. (Western Regional Coordinator) addressed to Ms. Debbie Williams dated December 13, 1995, he stated, “With regard to your homeschooling concerns, this initiative provides additional protection to homeschoolers by making it much more difficult for the state to impose additional restrictions and burdens upon homeschoolers. (See Section 17 (f)).”

The recommended references at the end of Chapter 9 are important resources for this concern. See especially any work from the late William Bentley Ball. “For more than twenty years, William Bentley Ball has been in the forefront of the increasingly contentious public debate over the proper role of government in the care and education of American children. As a constitutional lawyer, he has successfully argued several landmark cases before the US Supreme Court, helping to establish the few legal precedents that protect the rights of individual families against the power of the public educational system. Nevertheless, Ball saw a dangerous trend toward still more aggressive government control of education and child-rearing. In his book *Mere Creatures of the State* (Crisis Books, 1995), Ball argues forcefully that Christians must zealously defend the rights of parents as the primary educators of their own children.”12

**In Conclusion**

In this chapter we took a brief look at the cruel interplay between students and teachers in our secular education system. Despite the mistaken notion of neutrality, secularism is thoroughly atheistic, agnostic, and humanistic. In a humanistic system, punishment is likely non-existent or arbitrary at best. This will always breed contempt and reasons for conflict among students. Some humanist teachers despise Christians, and such attitudes will be transmitted to students. Thus, many evangelicals fail to discern the full ramifications of humanism against their children despite the past prophets that have warned us. As a result, many have already paid an exorbitant price in spiritual, mental, and physical suffering. Humanistic environments are much more fatal than evangelicals perceive. Again, evangelicals perish for lack of knowledge. (See Hosea 4:6.)

“A prudent man sees danger and takes refuge, but the simple keep going and suffer for it.” Solomon - Proverbs 22:3 (NIV)

School choice via scholarship vouchers, tuition tax credits, and charitable scholarships are options that have the potential of creating schools with cultures of camaraderie found nowhere else. Many un-churched parents will gladly seek out a Christian education for their children if it offers something of value the government schools do not have. This could simply be a drug, gang, violence, and persecution-free environment. It could be a special arts and music program, advanced science and engineering studies, sports specialties, or something else special altogether. Parents want their children to be
socially healthy and good citizens with proper morals. Everyone dreams of close-knit communities of caring for their children. If they perceive that Christian schools are better at this, then the un-churched will send their children to Christian schools. What an opportunity for evangelism! It’s not possible to watch the latest documentaries like *The Cartel* or *Waiting for Superman* with parents and children crying to escape $300,000 classrooms for cheaper charter schools and not realize that a new day of evangelistic opportunities exist in America. Considering how bad many public schools are in the United States, American Christians could reap a harvest of souls if we would look at education as a local missionary activity! The secular humanists have for decades.

A form of school choice exists for various nations in Europe. Clifford Cobb, author of *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities* admitted, “After centuries of religious wars, European countries have learned the importance of pluralism rather than mere toleration. As a result, the nations of Europe not only fund schools that represent the official state religion, they also provide support for other sectarian schools. In countries with Protestant or secular orientations, this primarily involves support for Catholic schools.”¹³

Since most people come to accept Christ as a child,[D] a profound and unprecedented opportunity for evangelism could exist if a school choice policy existed. School choice would give more options to be fishers of men. (See Matthew 4:19.) Choice limited to government schools alone is no choice at all, and charter schools are limited in freedom of curriculum. Christian teachers’ academic freedoms are still limited in charter schools. The teachers’ union could always move the unpopular teachers to wherever the students go and force the popular government schools to accept them. The teachers’ union’s political power is not diminished in a charter school model, because the charter schools must seek permission to exist from political appointees the union has established. For all these reasons, school choice must include private independent schools. Teachers at private independent schools are not unionized, and the school’s curriculum and philosophy is much closer to parental controls. This loss in humanistic curriculum control and political power are the main reasons the humanistic NEA is so vehemently opposed to real school choice.

A school choice program would also enable degreed professionals lacking a teacher’s certificate to teach and mentor in their specialty. In this period of major and extended unemployment and critical educational specialty needs, this could be a win-win situation for everyone except poor-performing teachers the teacher unions protect. Would you choose to have a retired or previously unemployed engineer teaching science and math because he or she wants to or a teacher that relies on the union to protect their job despite how poorly they perform? Considering how demanding engineering is, who do you think would really be the better science and math teacher?

A major mistake on the part of evangelicals is failing to become informed on all the various school choice options and their real ramifications. Being properly informed,

[D] The Barna Research Group stated that “The probability of accepting Christ is highest among kids under 14.” Source: “Teens and Adults have little chance of accepting Christ as Their Savior, pg. 1,
www.barna.org
then, is a measure of mature spirituality. “And of the children of Issachar, which were men that had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do” (1 Chronicles 12:32a KJV).

As in any free enterprise system, the government schools would finally become truly public schools with real sensitivity to public demands. This means that a public policy incentive would finally be in place to encourage all schools to listen to parental concerns and improve. If a public school was deemed good, then a school choice incentive will make it better and provide economic reasons for it to stay better. Free enterprise works in all other sectors. It works for our colleges and universities. If there was a reason for students to leave, one should always ask, why? The present government school model hides these problems from parents and the public. This is the other lesson learned from the Columbine Massacre. The problems of Columbine were hid from the public. As parents shop around, the problem schools to avoid become public knowledge. The schools most sensitive to parental and student concerns will also be known. School choice creates real public schools.

School conflicts are very predictable today. A parent becomes upset over an issue which prompts a visit with the teacher, principal, and then possibly the school board. Schools have absolutely no incentive to change anything because parents are required to send their children to their school. It is also very likely for the teachers’ union representatives to have control of the school board. This already puts parental concerns secondary to any school official’s concern. If a parent wants the school to respond to a specific request, that parent presently has the choice to 1) take their child out of the government system and educate their child at their own expense; or 2) hire an attorney to cause the school to begin spending money on its legal defense. The parent is at a great disadvantage.

The fear of student conflicts trapped in government schools should supersede any fear of loss of school funding due to a student that chooses to leave a school. (The funding should follow the student anyway. The school is also minus the expense of the child that leaves.) Yet it is the fear of loss of school funds that has prohibited the passage of most school choice ballot measures. Who would ever want to force Eric, Dylan or any other school murderer into their school? Yet, this is precisely the inevitable result when school choice is limited to the same non-responsive government, humanistic school model. School choice must include private independent schools that are free to attract students and parents via their own unique themes, philosophies, and special studies. Such schools will be much more sensitive to parents and children. Anything less than full independent choice is a design for another Columbine massacre. Some Columbine copycats have already been timely discovered and stopped. Should we be surprised?

**Why evangelicals are guilty:**

The cry of God’s heart is for all children everywhere to have the freedom to choose a godly education.
But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

Jesus the Christ - Mark 10:14 (KJV)

If Jesus was “much displeased” because the disciples kept children from Him, does this give any hint of Jesus’ attitude toward the humanists who do the same to children today? Could Jesus also be “much displeased” with evangelicals who are apathetic to school choice policies? How serious are evangelicals in their desire to be like Christ? Does it include this kind of passion? Then why aren’t we resisting the humanists and fighting hard for school choice so that any child could choose a Christian school? Do we really want the blessings of God on our country?

Is it even possible to counter thirty hours of a humanistic weekly indoctrination program in our public schools with maybe three hours of Christian devotions or fellowship? Would this please Jesus? How displeased is Jesus by evangelical apathy that holds children bondage to atheistic evangelism? This God of the New Testament (Matthew 25:30) is not any different from the Old Testament God on similar themes of judgment on apathies per Amos 6:1-6 and Obadiah 11.

Fighting for school choice via vouchers, tax credits, charitable scholarships, and by any means possible is more spiritual than many evangelicals perceive. If Jesus is “much displeased” with the humanists, how can He not also be “much displeased” with us for passionless negligence on school choice issues?

The godless continuously oppose school choice even during non-political years and then volunteer to flood neighborhoods with their propaganda during the voting year, while most evangelicals don’t even give the topic of school choice any serious consideration. When school choice was considered a voting issue, many communities did not have one favoring representative. Just as many sinners will be shocked by a judging God on their judgment day, so will many carnal evangelicals (Mark 8:38, Luke 9:26). Even John on the Island of Patmos revealed a New Testament God of judgment with stern warnings to the Churches in his day because of compromise, indifference, and apathetic-lukewarm Christians (Revelation 1:17-3:22).

It should then be no surprise in a nation of busy individuals with no time for God’s social agenda that God is beginning to have no time for us and will let us reap what we have sown. This pattern happened before with God’s people as Zechariah records (Zechariah 7:13). Amos records a similar history (Amos 4:6-11) and so did Hosea (Hosea 10:13-15). This pattern has become evident for our time too. War, unemployment, goofy politics, economic problems, added state controls, and judicial tyranny should not be a puzzle to any person with such misplaced priorities against God’s. God’s people in the Old Testament also had momentary losses of economics, temporary environmental problems (periodic droughts), and sporadic challenges to their national peace via military losses. Everyone thought these were just momentary natural losses except Amos. Amos clearly saw God’s hand in it all. Should we wonder why our society accelerates toward more secularism, decadence, violent crime, and even more loss of freedom under extreme
godless humanistic political regime of education, courts, and socialized state solutions? As we seek our own personal peace and affluence should we be surprised if God permits our personal peace to be assaulted either via crime or terrorists and our affluence taxed away. It should be no surprise why a nation of individuals with misplaced priorities of putting personal profits over God’s concerns should suffer all types of losses.

If we don’t care that the children are educationally indoctrinated by a godless regime, why should God care that we are politically manipulated and subtly controlled by the same godless regime? Interestingly, school choice also has the ability to limit the political power of the most politically powerful union in America— the National Education Association. Unfortunately, too many evangelicals are asleep on this important public policy.

There is another reason why some evangelicals are guilty. The first generation of Israelites failed to enter into the Promise Land because of fear. They had real reasons to be afraid. Their enemy was significantly bigger than they were. Added state controls associated with vouchers is a giant that is also to be feared. However, if we are controlled by fear, we will not be obedient to God. Real antidotes exist against added state controls if we would have the courage to seek God and then actively put them in place constitutionally and in office. The sad commentary is that evangelicals who are fearful that scholarship vouchers alone will induce state control, are overlooking the real reason for the loss of our liberties and that is—increasing godlessness. Godlessness is synonymous with anti-Christian sentiments. These elements are already in the process of silencing the Christian in every public platform via our courts and public policies now.

What could Bill and Irene do?

Bill and Irene could go to New Jersey and see children crying because they were not selected in a charter school enrollment lottery. New Jersey was picked because it holds the record on per classroom spending--over $300,000 per classroom. Something must be seriously wrong for children to want out of such expensive public schools and prefer instead to go to a charter school with less operating funds. They’re crying because the teacher unions have limited the number of charter schools. Competition for placement can be as high as ten students for one enrollment position. Bill and Irene could save time and travel expense and simply watch Bob Bowdon’s documentary, The Cartel and encourage others see it too. (www.thecartelmovie.com) Waiting for Superman is another movie with heart breaking details of children and parents crying. Both documentaries are excellent in communicating the political power and corruption of teacher unions. Stupid in America – How We Cheat Our Kids is another outstanding DVD that shows where school choice policies exist in the world and how it is causing their students to outperform American students. When children cry to escape $300,000 classrooms, a new opportunity exists for evangelism via a school choice policy. Should we remain apathetic while godlessness is force on the children?
Resources:

EVENTS:

National School Choice Week
801 W Norton Ave, Muskegon, MI 49441
The first event was January 23-29, 2011. Expect future annual events on the
fourth week in January. www.SchoolChoiceWeek.com (877) 367-0705

Websites:

1) www.rescuyourchild.com

2) Alliance for the Separation of School and State,
   1071 N. Fulton St., Fresno, CA 93728 (559) 499-1776
   Email: contact@schoolandstate.org
   Website: www.GetTheKidsOut.org

3) The Heritage Foundation
   http://www.heritage.org

4) Citizens for Excellence in Education, Dr. Robert Simonds
   www.nace-cee.org
   email: cee4kids@aol.com

5) Colorado Kids Can’t Wait
   http://coloradokidscantwait.org/

6) Frontline Ministries, Inc., P.O. Box 12072, Columbia, SC 28211, Phone: 1-803-
   714-1744, Email: exodusmandate@gmail.com,
   Website: www.exodusmandate.org

7) www.ParentalRights.org

8) ChoiceMedia.TV

DVDs:

1) The Cartel, A moving documentary by Bob Bowdon that shows the political
   power, greed, and corruption in a state that spends over $300,000 per classroom.
   Go to: www.thecartelmovie.com, Bowden Media, 156 Second St., Hoboken, NJ 07030

2) Waiting for Superman, Davis Guggenheim’s documentary is similar to The Cartel.
   Go to: www.waitingforsuperman.com

3) Stupid in America – How We Cheat Our Kids  This documentary with John Stossel
   shows how school choice in other parts of the world work to raise the academic
   achievement level of students and how American teacher unions oppose competition
   that educational choice offers. Go to: www.ABCNewsstore.com
4) *Stand & Deliver* – A 1988 film featuring the very successful Los Angeles math teacher Jaime Escalante and his struggle with his fellow teachers and public school politics in helping minorities achieve what others thought impossible. It’s never popular to show how mistaken the teachers’ union is. www.Amazon.com carries this DVD.

**Article:**
“School Choice: A Vehicle for Achieving Educational Excellence in the African-American Community,” by Polly Williams (The Heritage Lectures #414)
The Heritage Foundation, 214 Massachusetts Ave, N.E., Washington, D.C. 20002-4999 (202) 546-4400

**Booklet:**

**Books:**

2) *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities*, Clifford W. Cobb,
ICS Press, San Francisco, California,

3) *The Closing of the American Heart, What’s Really Wrong with America’s Schools*, Ronald H. Nash, Probe Books, Distributed by Word Publishing

4) *The De-Valuing of America – The Fight for Our Culture and Our Children*, William J. Bennett, Summit Books

5) *Child Abuse in the Classroom*, Edited by Phyllis Schlafly
Published by Pere Marquette Press

6) *Mind Siege – The Battle for Truth in the New Millennium*,
Tim Lahaye & David Noebel, Word Publishing

7) *Clergy in the Classroom, The Religion of Secular Humanism*,
David A. Noebel, J.F. Baldwin & Kevin Bywater, Summit Press

8) *The Death of Right and Wrong*, Exposing the Left’s Assault on Our Culture and Values, Tammy Bruce, Forum - An Imprint of Prima Publishing.

9) *What’s Wrong with Today’s PTA?*, Charlene K. Haar
www.focusoneducation.com

11) *The Children Trap – Biblical Principles for Education*, Robert Thoburn & Dr. Gary North, General Editor
Chapter 5: Values in Vacuum in Vain

We must penetrate the mystery of how non-abusive, ordinary parents can fail to produce civilized offspring.

Mona Charen [Former Reagan White House Communications Aide]¹

The Columbine High School massacre was a stunning shock for Americans. How could two boys heartlessly kill so many of their classmates and then willfully take their own lives? What could possibly motivate them?[A] These and other nightmarish questions reawaken secret fears in the hearts of many American parents. How can parents instill civilized values in their children when the world seems to be going in the wrong direction? Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold lived in nice neighborhoods and went to “wonderful” schools that many Americans aspire to live in and desire for their children.

What happened?

Initially the public consensus was 73 percent believed that the “moral values of a society” was the “major” cause. “Minor”, “no part”, and “don’t know” were other grading options offered in this poll. However, the general public had no uncertainty on this matter even a year later. They still believed very strongly (70 percent) that the “moral values of a society” was a “major” contributor to the Columbine disaster.² It’s interesting to note that despite the massive liberal media blitz on gun control that first year after Columbine, public opinion dropped significantly from 62 to 55 percent that lack of gun control was the major cause. It should also be noted that “irresponsible parents” and “a lack of individual responsibility” also received high percentage grades as “major” contributors as well. However, “irresponsible parents” and “individual responsibility” in reality are similar expressions of “individual morality.” Individual morality is a subset of moral values of a society.

This leads naturally to a few questions that we all have a tendency to ignore. Is it possible to teach morality or character education effectively in a VOID environment without God as the basis? If God is not the basis for morality, what can effectively be substituted? How effective is a godless morality anyway? Are there any examples of this anywhere in history?

Desperate Parents Search for Answers

Several years before the Columbine Massacre, the Orcutt Union School district in Santa

---

[A] In an editorial titled “We’ll never know all of the details of Columbine,” columnist Mike Rosen wrote: “We know why, as much as we can: the two adolescents were angry and deranged.”³ Question: If derangement is a matter of wrong ideas, what and how were these ideas promoted into these two adolescents? How did value become assigned to their ideas so much so that they were willing to die for them? With over committed parents, what part did secular schools play in the transmission of such deranged values? We will examine a possible answer in this chapter.
Maria, California, held a seminar for parents. The topic was “How to Raise Responsible Children.” Obviously, the PTA hit on a sensitive issue with the local parents because it was well attended. The speaker, let’s call him Mr. DoGood, was an Irvine public school principal with many merits including the National Outstanding Educator of the year awarded by the National PTA.

Like a Pentecostal evangelist, Mr. DoGood had a sermon on values in education. He paced back and forth and even stood on the furniture. We responded to his prompts. We laughed. We seriously reflected at times. He challenged us to affirm our kids. He gave us rules to live by. He touched our hearts to be models of love. There was no doubt he had total control of the audience. From the start, his message and charisma held our attention.

At one point, he stated, “Anyone or anything that can make you angry and keep you angry, conquers you!” Wait a minute, I thought. That’s in the Bible—Proverbs 16:32. “He that is slow to anger is better than the mighty; and he that ruleth his spirit [is better] than he [a general] that taketh a city” (KJV). And when he said, “Schools are never value neutral,” I almost shouted AMEN!

In closing, he played Sandi Patti’s song, “Love in Many Languages” and dismissed that mixed audience with “God bless you.” It was a wonderful chicken-soup-good-feeling time. The Christians sitting behind me were ecstatic with smiles. His style was definitely evangelical and his rules subtly paralleled biblical passages on several points, but there was one very serious problem.

Mr. DoGood emphasized the idea that public schools should promote: “Choosing the values to live by and living the values you choose.” This is moral relativism, a pet doctrine of humanism. A child could one day come home from school and tell his parents, “Mom, Dad, I don't care for our values anymore. I’ve learned that it's OK if I choose my own.” The Christians sitting behind me, very impressed by form, seemed to have missed this crucial point. These evangelicals seemed to be content with eating chicken soup if only their feelings were positively stroked with tokens of subtle feel-good Christianity.

As Mr. DoGood’s book table was stormed by the curious, I left the meeting with several questions. Will Americans continue to believe in “separation of church and state” if humanistic revivals sweep our schools? Should taxpayers pay $995.00 for Mr. DoGood’s coordinator guide and seven classroom guides when they seem to contain the same rules that are in the Bible? The Gideons could make free Bible distributions if only the school officials would practice the tolerance they preach and stop harassing the Gideons on the public sidewalks near the “public” schools. Besides, the Gideons favorite author really is out of this world! But, maybe that’s why Mr. DoGood was so popular. We could be our own gods and choose our own rules. No one was forcing religion on anyone, or were

---

[B] Evidently Mr. DoGood is an evangelical author, because his book was later discovered among other books by Christian authors at a Promise Keepers meeting in Los Angeles.
they? Isn't a religion something to live by? If each person becomes their own authority in choosing a menu of values, did not that make them their own god? Isn't this humanism? Shouldn't we be disturbed by the “Christian” response here? Why could they not see a problem pending? Does anyone doubt that the Columbine shooters were clearly acting out the values that they chose? Can we sneak Christianity into public schools in humanistic terms and not lose something? What religion are we really promoting, Christianity or humanism? Do you ever wonder how God views evangelicals that readily bow down to the goddess of humanism or compromise and worship in the religion of autonomous mankind? Those that refuse to build a political consensus with other traditional faiths to oppose any of this, due to fears of compromising in a spirit of ungodly ecumenicalism, are already compromising and supporting godless humanism by failing to oppose them.

**Can We Be Good Without God?**

Do we really need to mention God if the rules are the same? Some evangelicals will concur with the humanists that we can effectively teach values without Jesus Christ. For a time and in limited circumstances, there may appear to be a measure of success. However, both humanists and such mistaken evangelicals should consult the respected humanists Will and his wife, Ariel Durant, in regard to this question. They wrote *The Story of Civilization* and later received the 1976 Humanist Pioneer Award.

Will and Ariel Durant answered this question at least three different ways:

- “There is no significant example in history, before our time, of a society successfully maintaining moral life without the aid of religion.”

- “If Rationalism wishes to govern the world without regard to the religious needs of the soul, the experience of the French Revolution is there to teach us the consequences of such a blunder.” Here the Durants quoted agnostic Renan in their book: *The Lessons of History*, pg 50 & 51.

- “Moreover, we shall find it no easy task to mold a natural ethic strong enough to maintain moral restraint and social order without the support of supernatural consolations, hopes, and fears” [*Humanist* magazine of February 1977].

Dr. Schaeffer then commented, “Poor Will Durant! It is not just difficult, it is impossible.”

Bill Donohue, President of the Catholic League, also explained how Guenter Lewy, a secular agnostic humanist, changed his mind on the possibility of virtue without God and wrote a book titled, *Why America Needs Religion: Secular Modernity and Its Discontents*. Mr. Donohue explained that, “In the 1990s, this renowned social scientist started a book on secular humanism and moral relativism with the expressed intent of showing how they neither undermined the meaning and significance of human life nor
contributed to the erosion of moral values. He ended up unable to support his thesis. Indeed, he came to realize how indispensable religion is to the moral order.\textsuperscript{8}

\textit{We know of no society anywhere that has managed to build a culture devoid of religion.}\textsuperscript{9} No society has yet been successful in teaching morality without religion... for morality cannot be created.\textsuperscript{10} Guenter Lewy, Secular Humanist Social Scientist

The famous atheist, Friedrich Nietzsche, confirms the same humanistic confession: “Morality [is] the great antidote against practical and theoretical nihilism.”\textsuperscript{11}

Ravi Zacharias’ \textit{A Shattered Visage, The Real Face of Atheism} reminds us that Nietzsche said there are two consequences of the death of God that would penetrate every avenue of life. “Because God had died in the nineteenth century... then the twentieth century would become the bloodiest century in history and, second, that a universal madness would break out.”\textsuperscript{12} Deep down we all know this fact. Some of us even feel that our lifestyles are being cramped should anyone suggest that we will stand before a just and holy God someday. While begging, bribing, or threatening our kids to be good, if God is not the basis of their moral system, they will always be able to say...\textquote{Who Says?} or \textquote{So What?} The reason --values in a vacuum are in vain.

Some in the Ozzie and Harriet generation have difficulty understanding this. Their generation had absolutes that differentiated between good and bad seemingly without direct ties to religion. In reality their absolutes were derived from the Judeo-Christian ethic inherited from this nation’s early Christian influence. Until about the 1960s, these values were publicly accepted as proper without question. Any resistance was a private, secret practice because of the associated shame. Yet just as surely as the Protestant Reformation challenged the concept that the Church was the sole authority to interpret scripture, so the counter culture movement challenged authority and traditional norms in all aspects of our culture and society. The Protestant Reformation freed the individual to interpret scripture for themselves. The authority is vested in Holy Scriptures alone because it is God's Holy Spirit inspired Word. Yet it was the seeds of doubt against the Holy Scriptures, planted in many minds via our public institutions, that gave growth to the counter culture movement in the 60s. In the counter culture movement, the individual was "freed" to define what is good. In this ethos, authority is vested in each individual to define their own lifestyle, however moral or immoral. In practice, each individual became their own god.

From the Columbine killers’ videos Klebold said, “I know we’re gonna have followers because we’re so f---ing god-like.”\textsuperscript{13}

\textbf{The Godless Factor}

Mike Huckabee, former governor of Arkansas with Dr. George Grant, wrote, “While the nation’s population has increased only 41 percent since 1960, the number of violent crimes has increased more than 550 percent. Indeed, the rate of violent crime in the United States is worse than any other industrialized country in the world. Our homicide
rate is more than five times that of Europe, and four times that of Canada, Australia, or New Zealand.

In fact, the fastest growing segment of the criminal population is our nation's children. During the last decade, the arrest rate for juveniles for murder increased 93 percent, the arrest rate for aggravated assault increased 72 percent, and for forcible rape, 24 percent. Some 20 percent of high school students now carry a firearm, knife, razor, or club on a regular basis. Not surprisingly, since 1986 there has been a 1,740 percent rise in the number of children treated for knife and gunshot wounds.”

Chuck Colson, president of Prison Fellowship, wrote: “America as a whole has the highest per capita rate of incarceration in the world, and for the last 25 years the crime rate has gone up every year. We can't build prisons fast enough.”

Colson said, "Criminologist James Q. Wilson, among others, has tried to identify the root cause of this epidemic of violence. When he began his inquiry, he was certain that he would discover that in the great period of industrial revolution in the later half of the 19th century there was a tremendous increase in crime. But, to his astonishment, he discovered a decrease. And then he looked at the years of the Great Depression. Again, there was a significant decrease in crime. Frustrated by these findings, which upset all our preconceived notions, [That poverty, social injustice, etc. lead to crime.] Wilson decided to search for a single factor to correlate. The factor he found was religious faith.

“When crime should have been rising in the late 1800s because of rapid urbanization, industrialization, and economic dislocation, Victorian morality was sweeping across America. It was a time of intense spirituality. It was not until the conscious rejection of Victorian morality during the roaring Twenties that crime went up. This was the era when Sigmund Freud's views were coming into vogue among 'thinking' Americans: people weren't evil, just misguided or mistreated, or they required better environments. Sin was regarded as a lot of religious claptrap.”

The problem of children killing children is worse than most Americans realize. In 1994, the Children’s Defense Fund reported that “A child or teenager is killed by gunfire every two hours in the United States – the equivalent of a classroom full every two days.” Knives, guns, and alcohol have been around for a long time. In fact teenagers have always had the ability to get pregnant and families the option to split up. Yet in our "enlightened age" with its economic prosperity and high-tech superiority, America is experiencing social problems like never before. What are we doing differently now?

We are indoctrinating our children in atheism and agnosticism via scientific naturalism. The idea of God is simply a questionable subjective in the minds of too many people. Thus they feel no shame or fear of God. We have become our own gods.

Our youth are being bombarded with the humanistic philosophies today more than ever. This includes atheistic evolutionary indoctrination, situational ethics, and lessons in relativism despite what parents want their children to learn. The facade of neutrality, the
hypocrisy of openness, and the subtle scientific censorship yields ignorance and indoctrination more than the average citizen realizes. Should we be surprised by the actions of any person who has replaced eternal accountability to a Supreme Being with their own self as the final arbitrator of right and wrong? Do we really want to move to a society of such individuals?

Consequences of a Moral Culture (Philosophy)

James Davison Hunter, author of *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil,* reported on moral choices of children in grades 4 through 12. The children sampled were from diverse economic backgrounds of wealthy, poor, and middle-class. They included white, black, Hispanic, and Asian ethnic compositions from inner city, suburbs, and the country. Choices were recorded from five basic philosophical models that Hunter borrowed from Robert Bellah and his colleagues. Their book is titled: *Habits of the Heart.*

The five philosophical models are:

- **Theistic Moral Culture:** These children made moral judgments in accordance with scripture in a biblical tradition of Christianity or Judaism. Sixteen percent of the children operated with this philosophical model even though 82 percent claimed to believe in God, 56 attended church weekly, and 34 percent claimed to have had a life-altering religious experience.

- **Conventionalist Moral Culture:** These children would follow the advice of an authority figure such as a parent, teacher, or youth leader for general social practices representing the customs and conventions of their community. Twenty percent of the children were in this category.
• Civic Humanism Culture: These children made moral decisions according to what they perceived to be in the best interest of the community. The “common good” was the guiding principle. They were willing, in principle, to sacrifice their personal interest for the “common good.” Twenty-five percent of the children were in this category.

• Utilitarian Moral Culture: Here personal self-interest was the criteria for moral decision making. Their moral compass was to do that which would improve their situation or put them ahead of the competition. Ten percent of the children were in this category.

• Expressivist Moral Culture: Like the Utilitarian, these children believed authority resided in the individual. However, for the expressivist, decisions were made that were perceived to meet emotional or psychological felt needs. These children would do what would make them feel good. Eighteen percent of the children were in this category.

All children were asked difficult questions that involved making moral choices. The following table is just a sampling. The following numbers express the percentages that believed the moral issue in question was acceptable.

The reader should pick a moral issue and read across the following table from left to right and carefully note the pattern. It should be no surprise to evangelicals that the Theist is the least likely to cheat, lie, or steal, and show the most restraint in sexual conduct. On the other hand, those operating on individual autonomy (Civic Humanist, Utilitarian, Expressivist) were the least likely to operate in a biblical framework. The sociologists would say – “The least likely to embrace a traditional social ethic.”

Note carefully that the Civic Humanist is a much narrower definition of humanism than we have previously used. The general definition of humanist includes all individuals that place authority in something other than God. This could be the state – collective individuals for the common good or simply the individual. The Civic Humanist, Utilitarian, and Expressivist meet this general definition of humanism.

Hunter stated: “As one would expect, opinion divided considerably. Some children thought it was okay to cheat, lie, and steal, others wanted to hedge their answers, and still others emphatically rejected these options altogether. Some children were very altruistic toward strangers and other children were indifferent. Some children were sexually permissive, others less so, and still others, not at all. The array of responses was complicated indeed.”

“How, though, does one make sense of the complex array of responses? Why would one youngster cheat on a test and another not? Why would one youngster avoid the homeless person and another either help him with money or talk with him about his problems?” “And why would one teenager advise their friend to have an abortion, another advise her
to carry the child and then put it up for adoption, and still another advise her to keep her baby?”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Moral Issue</th>
<th>Theistic [C]</th>
<th>Conventionalist</th>
<th>Civic Humanist</th>
<th>Utilitarian</th>
<th>Expressivist</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>OK to Cheat</td>
<td>6%</td>
<td>8%</td>
<td>10%</td>
<td>16%</td>
<td>17%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OK to Steal</td>
<td>2%</td>
<td>3%</td>
<td>4%</td>
<td>5%</td>
<td>8%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OK to Lie</td>
<td>20%</td>
<td>28%</td>
<td>44%</td>
<td>50%</td>
<td>50%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OK to Drink (1)</td>
<td>7%</td>
<td>15%</td>
<td>27%</td>
<td>35%</td>
<td>37%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Premarital sex OK (2)</td>
<td>18%</td>
<td>28%</td>
<td>38%</td>
<td>43%</td>
<td>54%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Premarital sex OK (3)</td>
<td>20%</td>
<td>45%</td>
<td>60%</td>
<td>64%</td>
<td>69%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Premarital sex is a sin</td>
<td>70%</td>
<td>40%</td>
<td>20%</td>
<td>20%</td>
<td>20%</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suicide OK</td>
<td>3%</td>
<td>5%</td>
<td>9%</td>
<td>12%</td>
<td>10%</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

All percentages were interpretations of Hunter’s bar graphs (The Death of Character, pages 165-168), except bold numbers taken from his text.

(1) Percentage of young people who would drink underage without worrying.
(2) Percentage of young people who say they would have premarital sex (junior high and high school students only).
(3) Percentage of young people who say sex is okay if couples love each other.

“Put differently, what accounts for this diversity of moral commitment? Social scientists typically favor a range of background factors, such as race, class, and gender, to account for such differences. But against this one finds something quite remarkable: Children’s underlying attachments to a moral culture [philosophy] were the single most important

[C] While the score for the Theist philosophy is impressive, it isn't perfect. Could it be because some of us mistakenly rationalize our lifestyles with: We can never lose our salvation, no matter what we do. We are under grace, not under law. Jesus will always forgive me. No one is perfect. I’ll just give a little extra in the offering or do something good to make up for this secret little sin. All this is a reflection of those that have not fully assimilated a true Biblical worldview about God and what it means to be saved from sin. (Hebrews 12:14) Maybe it's due to the fact that sin really is fun and popular right now. "Because iniquity shall abound the love of many shall wax cold,” (Matthew 24:12 KJV) In the practical sense, “Christian” carnality is no different from autonomous humanism. If one does not believe the right things about God concerning how God will punish sinners, then such a person is putting faith in an idol god that doesn’t exist. The godless factor still applies. The social effects of believing in a false god are no different from believing in no God. (Romans 6:15-16, Galatians 5:19-21, Ephesians 5:3-7) It is said that a Christian atheist is someone that believes in God, but doesn’t live like it.

See also Josh McDowell and Bob Hostetler's book: Right from Wrong: What You Need To Know To Help Youth Make Right Choices, (Word Publishing, 1994) Their subtitle: "New study reveals a majority of churched youth can no longer determine…Right From Wrong.” Most evangelical youth only know of a god of grace. This is an unbalanced view of God. It is an evangelical idol god, a false god.
and consistent factor in explaining the variation in their moral judgments. It was the children's rudimentary ethical systems, in other words, that provided the most far-reaching and dependable explanation for the decisions they made. These assumptions act very much like moral compasses, providing the bearings by which they navigate the complex moral terrain of their lives.”

Hunter stated: “Even when subjected to rigorous statistical analysis, the conclusion is the same: the moral culture children were living within was the most important determinant of their behavioral predispositions. The influence of moral culture cuts across the boundaries of economic circumstances, race and ethnicity, gender, age, and family structure. Thus, for example, a white youngster from the wealthy suburbs of Greenwich, Connecticut, who lived by theistic ideals would tend to make the same decisions as a Hispanic youngster of the same age and moral orientation from the ghettos of south central Los Angeles. And a black teenager who lived by a utilitarian moral compass from the upper-middle-class neighborhoods in Mobile, Alabama, would very likely make the same moral judgments as a white teenager with similar orientation from the farmlands around Sioux City, Iowa.”

The 1996 Survey of American Public Culture, conducted by The Post-Modernity Project at the University of Virginia in conjunction with the Gallup Organization, explored similar issues among eighteen to twenty-four-years-olds and found the same pattern.

William Bennett agreed: “Even social scientists now recognize the importance of sound values and moral norms in the upbringing of children. Empirical studies confirm what most people, because of the basic common sense, already know. What determines a young person's behavior in academic, sexual, and social life are his deeply held convictions and beliefs. They determine behavior far more than race, class, economic background, or ethnicity. Nature abhors a vacuum; so does a child’s soul... As the Roman scholar Pliny the Elder put it, ‘What we do to our children, they will do to society.’” Looking today at what we see many kids doing to themselves, to others, and to society at large, we need to reflect on what society collectively is doing to them in the critical task of enculturation, the passing on of our values, in an often hostile atmosphere.”

This hostile atmosphere includes our government humanistic schools.

Please carefully scan each row in the previous table and notice the high correlation between increasing decadence and a philosophy of autonomy and separated from God. It should be no surprise why we have such an escalation of decadence in our godless society. The proliferation of a philosophy of personal autonomy via humanism and secularism is in our schools with pride. This is all to be expected as the natural outcome of our society that has changed from a biblical worldview to a secular one.

"For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he.” Proverbs 23:7 (KJV)
“For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defileth not a man.” Jesus the Christ - Matthew 15:19-20 (KJV)
Consequences of a Secular Culture (Philosophy)

Secularism is the belief that the physical universe is all that is real. "Any view that affirms the supernatural is, by definition, considered irrelevant or irrational." 26

On June 25, 1962, in the case Engel v. Vitale, the U. S Supreme Court delivered its first ruling which completely separated Christian principles from education. This case struck down school prayer. David Barton said, “Even the World Book Encyclopedia's 1963 Yearbook noted that this case was the first time there had been a separation of church and state in education.” 27 This was just the beginning of the implementation of a secular society.

In the following years other judicial decisions were made to establish the secular philosophy even more securely in our schools. David Barton also pointed out that “in 1965, in Reed v. Van Hoven, a court determined that it was permissible for students to pray over their lunch at school so long as no one knew they were praying--they couldn't say words or move their lips, but they could pray if no one knew about it!” 28

“In one year alone, three cases made the courts challenging the right of students to see copies of the Ten Commandments while at school. The Supreme Court accepted the Stone v. Graham case from Kentucky, where a copy of the Ten Commandments was hanging in the hallways of the schools.” 29

The move to a secular society was not just the result of judicial activity toward school policies. "Most students today are ignorant of the role of religion in our moral beginnings and development as a nation. One reason is that since the 1960s, the story of religion in American history has shrunk to nearly nothing in public school textbooks. In 1986 New York University professor Paul Vitz published his much-discussed book Censorship: Evidence of Bias in our Textbooks, reporting example after example of how the portrayal of [traditional] religion had been systematically excluded from school texts.” 30 We must not be mistaken and now think that religion is separated from our public schools. This is true for traditional religion, but not for untraditional religion such as humanism.

What are the consequences in a society that tries to remove God from its mind, heart, and soul-molding institutions? It should be no surprise then that secularism should become the national religion and cultural ethos. Vacuums in souls do not exist. Some philosophy (belief system) will fill it. The sociological consequences of an evolving secular philosophy in the following decades should not be surprising.

Should we be surprised that we now have children killing and torturing other children with delight? Don't just focus on the schoolyard crimes. (See violence sampling in the book: Kids Who Kill, pages 9-21)
“For decades prior to 1962-63, birth rates for unwed teen girls had remained relatively stable; however, with the court's separation of religious principles from students, birth rates for unwed girls have now increased every year since 1962-63.”

“Statistically, the divorce rate had been steadily declining for years--and even decades--prior to 1962-63. But beginning in 1963, the divorce rate skyrocketed: between 1963 and 1981, the number of divorces in America tripled. The United States has now become number one in the world in the rate of divorce.”

“After having remained statistically stable for years, since the removal of religious principles in 1962, the number of violent crimes has now surpassed population growth by 794 percent, causing the United States to become the world's leader in violent crime.”

“Prior to 1963, there were never more than two consecutive years in which the [SAT - Scholastic Aptitude Test] scores either rose or declined; but beginning in 1963, scores plummeted for eighteen consecutive years--unprecedented!”

Prophetic Voices from the Past

Anyone who has been a serious student of our history knows we are far removed from our original moral customs. Our nation's Founding Fathers knew that social problems would develop in a society ignorant of God and His word. While they were debating over and creating our Constitution, they approved and passed another very significant government document, known as the Northwest Ordinance. Article III states: “Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged.”

In George Washington’s Farewell Address, he stated: “Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, Religion and morality are indispensable supports...And let us with caution indulge the supposition, that morality can be maintained without religion... reason and experience both forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principle.”

John Witherspoon, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, put it this way: “A republic once equally poised must either preserve its virtue or lose its liberty”

Dr. Benjamin Rush, another signer of the Declaration of Independence, wrote a letter that was titled in an 1830 tract: “A Defense of the Use of the Bible in Schools.” The American Tract Society today reprints this tract under the title: "The Bible in Schools--From a Letter of Dr. Benjamin Rush." Please note carefully the accuracy of Dr. Rush's warnings. He mentioned republicanism (liberty) would be affected and morality would quickly deteriorate by our actions associated with public school policies.

…I cannot but suspect that the present fashionable practice of rejecting the Bible from our schools has originated with Deists. And they discovered great ingenuity in this new mode of attacking Christianity. If they proceed in it, they will do
more in half a century in extirpating our religion than Bolingbroke or Voltaire
could have effected in a thousand years.

But passing by all other considerations, and contemplating merely the political
institutions of the United States, I lament that we waste so much time and money
in punishing crimes and take so little pains to prevent them. We profess to be
republicans, and yet we neglect the only means of establishing and perpetuating
our republican forms of government; that is, the universal education of our youth
in the principles of Christianity by means of the Bible; for this divine book, above
all others, favors that equality among mankind, that respect for just laws, and all
those sober and frugal virtues which constitute the soul of republicanism.

If moral precepts alone could have reformed mankind, the mission of the Son of
God into our world would have been unnecessary.

Just look at the half century of social changes between 1950 and 2000. We can see that
Dr. Benjamin Rush was amazingly accurate in his prediction.

In 1892 most American teachers still shared that concern with Dr. Rush. In celebrating
the 400th anniversary of Columbus, they wanted to leave a legacy how education had
been conducted in America and offered the following warning in response to the Church's
act of relinquishing the control of public elementary education to the state:

"...if the study of the Bible is to be excluded from all state schools, if the inculcation
of principles of Christianity is to have no place in the daily program, if the worship of God
is to form no part of the general exercises of these public elementary schools, then the
good of the state would be better served by restoring all schools to church control."³⁹

On the Thomas Jefferson memorial in Washington D.C., one can also read: "Can the
liberties of our nation be secure, if we have removed a conviction that these liberties are a
gift of God?"

What is this connection between "liberties" and a "conviction that these liberties are a gift
of God"? [D]

Historians have known that Thomas Jefferson, while being the third President (1801-
1809), chaired the school board for the District of Columbia where he authored the first
plan of education adopted by the city of Washington, which used the Bible and Isaac
Watts’ hymnal as the principle books to teach reading to students.⁴⁰ If one would take
the time to read the history books that have not been edited by the "separation of church

[D] If we teach children to laugh at the idea that our liberties are a gift from God, what will keep them from
laughing at our Founding Father’s original Constitutional intention? If the original Constitutional intention
is changed, how secure will our future liberties be?

Evangelicals are losing Christian liberties because we have failed to be vigilant in this relationship of
public convictions as Dr. Benjamin Rush, Thomas Jefferson and others predicted. Present cultural
convictions define future liberties.
and state" philosophers, one will learn that these quotes are just the tip of the iceberg of this nation’s Christian heritage.

The "separation of church and state" philosophers have been so successful that many Americans believe these words are actually in the Constitution. They are not. The First Amendment begins as “Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof:…” Here our Founding Fathers used the word religion as we use the word denomination. Please note that their prohibition was on Congress only. Our Founding Fathers wanted Christian principles in government but did not want one denomination to have a special favored status with Congress. Congress has always started its sessions with prayer even to this day. Why then has this been an issue for children in public schools? In the beginning it was not so.

The Founding Father Noah Webster wrote his dictionary in 1828. In it he dedicated his dictionary to the spiritual edification of America. In the front of his dictionary, he gave his testimony of his conversion to Christ and the plan of salvation. Twenty-seven percent of his examples of connotation and denotation were based on Bible verses. If we take the same textbooks that our Founding Fathers wrote and presented them for adoption in our public schools today, they would be declared unconstitutional under the very document that our Founding Fathers wrote. How stupid can we be? Obviously there is another agenda here. Constitutionality is only a facade. We have made the mistake that secularization or the implementation of the "godless factor" was philosophically neutral. In truth, no philosophical vacuum exists anywhere. Someone’s religious ideas will control public policy and government education.

**A History Lesson: The Russian Experiment without God**

From the moderate to the skeptic, it should be obvious to everyone what the root cause of our social problems is. Our social experiment without God for the last fifty years has produced predictable results that were recorded in the Bible thousands of years ago. (In the days of Israel's judges, “every man did that which was right in his own eyes,” Judges 21:25.) Anyone who has read Judges knows the sad state of Israel's affairs during those days. The Bible gives us a choice to 1) ignore it and repeat the mistakes of others, or 2) learn from the mistakes of others and have life. Our social experiment without God parallels the social decadence of ancient biblical times and for the same reason. Therefore, we can believe the Bible has important lessons to teach us today.

The Russians learned this after seventy years of godlessness. "A delegate from the Russian Ministry of Education came to the U.S. to implore the evangelical community to send them religious teachers.

As a result, over sixty organizations formed The CoMission, with a five-year plan to send 12,000 Americans to the Commonwealth of Independent States. There the 'Christian peace corps' trained teachers and administrators to present a course on Judeo-Christian ethics in Russia's schools.
The invitation was extended by Dr. Aleksandr G. Asmolov, deputy of the Ministry of Education for the Russian Federation. ‘Do we have the right to deprive our children of knowledge about God and Christian values? No and once again no,’ Asmolov declared.

One among the Russian delegation, Evgenly Kurkin, poignantly observed, ‘Seventy years ago we closed God out of our country, and it has caused so many problems in our society we can not count them. … We must put God back into our country, and we must begin with our children.’

William F. Buckley, Jr. witnessed first hand the influence of Chuck Colson’s prison ministry and stated in an essay titled: “A Dose of Religion Is a Practical Cure for Crime,” that “…one need not believe in God in order to believe that a belief in him is a transfiguring psychological event. In fact, it is of course preposterous not to believe this.”


The Results of a Godless Philosophy

Our chicken soup culture does not fully understand the ethos that is created by a value system that sanctions individual autonomy, dabbles in relativism, laughs at absolutes, worships self-gratification, or mocks self-sacrifice. This is the religion of natural, autonomous man. Mix in atheism and you have supreme autonomy where collective selves define right and wrong and were individual actions have no punishment or rewards in the eternal scheme. You can play the 8 to 5 game, but why if no one seems to care? No one seems to love. Mix in rejection of peers to amplify feelings of isolation and loneliness in a godless cruel universe where competition and survival of the fittest are the taskmasters. Everyone is in a hurry, but where are we going? Time and eternity will surely decompose all actions into irrelevance per this worldview. One hundred billion years from now who will care? Who will know? In this VOID ethos, individuals will have been dead longer than they ever lived. Even if the human race survives and technology advances, the size of the universe will still dwarf each frail human frame into an insignificant grain of sand. All present significance will be lost in the unending darkness when our sun has died its entropy heat death of countless other stars. And who can supply a purpose, then, in a loveless, godless, barren universe where all the players are decomposed, lost, scattered, and frozen in an eternal dark chaos of VOID?

The ramifications for those that do not think this secular philosophy through will be constantly surprised with the outcomes of others who do. It is never as pleasant as they originally envisioned. Those too busy with profit and pleasure will forever see those that do think it through as being deranged. After ultimate purpose has been removed, on what basis should these “deranged” thinkers buy into the player’s culture? Secularism removes life’s meaning and purpose. For these that have had the meaning and purpose of life removed, there are no more pleasures, and profit is vain. Once this is established, there is no point in playing life’s game anymore. It’s time to check out and maybe take as many
people with you as you desire. Look again at Robert Bellah’s data table above, and you will see suicide is favored more in the humanist’s mindset than in any other.

Someone said we should practice random acts of kindness. Oh, what a momentary flirt. Too bad it’s neither real nor lasting. Someone said to love, but can anyone really love what they do not respect? Who ever models this kind of love? Someone said to share, but who really goes beyond this tokenism? And who is consistent? Someone said to include, but why in such a competitive world? Someone said to be good, but what is goodness and who is good in a world of political corruption, corporate greed and lies, unfair economic favors among business leaders, and the constant bombardment of depravity from economically depressed neighborhoods to starving nations?

Mix a godless philosophy with individualism. Add in antagonistic peers, busy and over-committed parents, selfish voters, rebellious pride, and senses that have been dulled by 3D virtual violence, and a deadly shooting massacre becomes inevitable. In this panorama of causes, it’s easy to focus on pet peeves. It was the guns. It was the violent media. It was the apathetic parents. It was the taunting rejection of peers that did it. In truth all factors are combustible elements. For some kids, removing just one of these volatile issues could act as a preserving element in society for a period. Yet if we have such a tendency to pick one cause, why do we ignore what is obviously the fundamental cause? Why do we ignore the effects of a godless philosophy of VOID? Are we too embarrassed to mention that we need God? Are we so rebellious? Are we this carnally blind? Prophetic voices from the past and every present cultural indicator shouts out the consequence and importance of a God based philosophy. Add all the same combustible elements around children that love and respect God as the ultimate authority, and the situation changes. A child’s simple belief that the Supreme Eternal Judge of the universe will make things right for those that are faithful, and eternally punish those that reject Him, and the situation changes drastically. The "God Factor" belief alone has a significant civilizing effect even if all combustible elements (abusive environments, guns, drugs, gangs, etc.) are present in the life of a lonely, forsaken child.

The lesson of the Columbine Massacre is that godlessness breeds unfairness and apathy from teachers, cruelty, hatred, and violence in students. The surprise is that godless mindset dulls and diminishes any natural aversion to human suffering that many mistakenly believe is the restraining force in our schools and society. Columbine taught that any such natural “goodness” or aversion to cruel behavior is a fleeting mirage in the souls of our children. Such natural resistance to human suffering will evaporate from the hearts of some that have fully given themselves over to the VOID of godlessness just as surely as the VOID has destroyed the will for self survival.

In speaking of his friends Eric and Dylan, Brooks Brown stated: “Dylan was angry with society....He was made to believe that his dreams could never happen, and that the world would never get better. ...What was unusual about Eric and Dylan was the way they withdrew from everyone else and fed each other's delusions. They kept their beliefs to themselves, figuring the rest of the world would never understand them. They developed God complexes. What shreds of ethics they may have had left were destroyed as they
retreated more and more into their own world. ... I knew Dylan long enough to know that he didn't start out as a monster. He became one. That's what makes his fate so scary. The next Dylan could be your son. Your neighbor. Your best friend. Not some faceless, anonymous killer who comes out of the dark and snatches your loved ones. A regular person who faces the cruelty of the real world just like the rest of us and in whom something erodes away over time.

Eric and Dylan’s parents are like most parents. They loved their neighborhood schools and judged it sufficient to meet their child’s developmental needs. The indoctrination of VOID can be so subtle. While parents are sensitive to academic achievement, it’s unfortunate many are oblivious to the psychological and spiritual developments of a secular culture and the philosophy of VOID.

A Conservative Chronicle writer once wrote: "So your car broke down on a dark Los Angeles street and you suddenly found yourself approached by a band of youths. How would you feel if you knew that they were returning from a Bible study? [Would it make any difference if they were returning from a government rehabilitation program, basketball game, or a public school self-esteem program? Since children are more likely to learn biblical ethics in a school choice program than a government school, as this gang approaches you, would you wish then to have voted for such a school choice program?]."[E]

...people function on the basis of their worldview more consistently than even they themselves may realize.

Francis Schaeffer

Schaeffer also wrote: "It is curious how the world often seems to understand these issues better than most Christians and Christian leaders. For example, a recent essay in Time magazine entitled ‘Think Animal Thoughts’ spells out the real issue. In discussing ‘animal rights,’ Time tries to discover whether or not there is really any difference between animal life and human life:

“If human beings assume that they were created in the image of God, it is not difficult for them to see the vast and qualitative distance between themselves and the lesser order of creation. The Bible teaches that man has dominion over the fish of the sea, the fowl of the air, the cattle and every creeping thing. Perhaps the rise of the animal rights movement is a symptom of a more secular and self-doubting spirit...But in a secular sense how is human life different from animal life?” (This is Time magazine’s emphasis.)

Schaeffer continues, “Thus Time points out that when we take away the biblical teaching that God is the final reality and that God created man uniquely in his own image, then man as man has no intrinsic value. In a secular sense, human life is no different from

---

[1] It was the Jewish philosopher Dennis Prager that originally asked: 'If you were stranded on a lonely road in Los Angeles in the dead of night with your head under the hood of your car, and suddenly you heard the sound of footsteps and turned to see ten burly men walking toward you, would it or would it not make a difference to you if you knew they were coming out of a Bible study?'
animal life. Or in other words, when one accepts the secular worldview that the final reality is only material or energy shaped by chance, then human life is lowered to the level of animal existence. There are only two classifications—nonlife and life. And if one thinks of human life as basically no different from animal life, why not treat people the same way? It would only be religious nostalgia to do otherwise. And so it first becomes easy to kill children in the womb, and then if one does not like the way they turn out, to kill children after they are born. And then it goes on to the euthanasia of anyone who becomes a burden or inconvenience. After all, according to the secular worldview, human life is not intrinsically different from animal life—so why should it be treated differently?  

If children are taught that the VOID philosophy is a scientific fact, what will keep one child from killing another as though he was just killing another animal?

In the political debate, euthanasia is formatted in the "quality of life" question. In the abortion issue, it's the "quality of life" of the mother that is emphasized. And what school shooter was not trying to make a statement about his "quality of life" by doing away with those that taunted and irritated him? So do we really want to settle for some type of teaching of values formatted in secular terms separated from the Giver of Life, our Creator? If the godless liberals thought their deadly philosophy through to its final ramifications, they would be more afraid of it than their fear of guns.

And what will prohibit a mindset of immoral lawlessness in the general public that has lost godly convictions to keep it in check? The Rodney King riots in Los Angeles in 1992 gave testimony of an ethos of VOID. During this time, mobs of average citizens lived as though there was no God to watch them break into local businesses. These were not just poor people. Owners of nice vehicles robbed from local businesses, simply because they could do it and not get caught. Everyone knew law enforcement resources could not service all the calls for help.

This godlessness has become so pervasive and accepted in our culture that many people live as though the biblical God does not exist. This can take two basic forms. One is atheism and the other is agnosticism. While agnosticism is open to the idea of a New Age god and claims to “spirituality,” it’s still godless because it does not recognize the true biblical God of creation.

As godless people live out their choices in lifestyles, they will influence others. This VOID disease was initiated generations ago in the halls of academia and its primary base of intellectual influence is still accelerated today in the halls of academia. Culturally the VOID disease spreads via the arts—movies, music, and literature. This VOID spreads from person to person in a secularized culture. Almost everyone admires the godless elites. This happens because the VOID has become the final reality and accepted ethos in the minds of too many people. Robert Bork agrees. “The major obstacle to a religious renewal is the intellectual classes, who are highly influential and tend to view [traditional] religion as primitive superstition. They believe that science has left atheism as the only respectable intellectual stance. Freud, Marx, and Darwin, according to the
conventional account, routed the believers.”[F]48 Once the seed of godlessness is planted by a public policy or by any personal means of influence, then the fruit of lawlessness and decadence will follow. People will live without godly moral restraints. The results are lawlessness and wickedness. Jesus taught that such wickedness inspires even more acts of godlessness. This happens because people are drawn away from a love for God by a love for attractive, worldly, wicked pleasures they see others indulge in. How can anyone love something they believe doesn’t exist?

*If there is no God, everything is permitted.* Fyodor Dostoevsky

*Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold.*

Jesus Christ--Matthew 24:12 (NIV)

In other words, as sin becomes so much fun and popular, people’s love for God will grow cold.

Back to the second fundamental question:

**QUESTION:** What are the social ramifications for any secular society?

**SECOND ANSWER:** A secular society is a danger to all life.

Secularists need to understand the full ramifications of the kind of society they seek to promote. The secularist (non-traditional believer) is much more likely to commit suicide than the traditional believer because the secularist is much more likely to view life as vain and without purpose and with no penalty in eternity. This mindset is a danger to all life. Both life and liberty are at risk in this philosophical religious environment.

The resistance to bloody violence is as natural as the drive to survive. Many non-traditionally religious people understand this natural tendency and judge themselves as “good.” They thus resist the notion that goodness cannot be achieved without God as the basis. The lesson of Columbine’s atheism is that VOID diluted and destroyed any natural tendency for survival and bloodshed aversion in the lives of two boys. This is because atheism robs meaning and significance. In the eternal scheme, if VOID is true, we will all vanish. Lessons from history and society point out that morality cannot be successfully taught without God. Therefore, any compromise to eliminate God makes the teaching of moral character fruitless. All this becomes evident when the pressure is on and the lights are out.

---

[F] Bork adds, “Freud and Marx are no longer taken as irrefutable by intellectuals, and now it appears to be Darwin’s turn to undergo a devaluation.” Some godless elites are beginning to waffle in their atheistic beliefs as others attempt to prop their atheistic institutions with political power. The general public has not caught up with this yet. If evangelicals could only understand these new opportunities then maybe evangelicals could realize that we are the major obstacle to a religious renewal and not the intellectual classes.
**Secular Ethics**

In Colorado Springs a charter school was formed by a group of committed Christian parents and staff. Their dedicated efforts are to be applauded as the school strives to be salt and light in a darkened culture. On one particular parent board night, it was mentioned that all potential board members should read the book: *Educating for Character: How Our Schools Can Teach Respect and Responsibility* by Thomas Lickona. This book is a must-read for those that desire to tip-toe around the “separation of church and state” debate and yet attempt to leave a positive moral influence on young people. However, should our long-term strategy be a continued compromise to operate in the secular format of pseudo neutrality? The paperback edition of this book has an endorsement from Bill Honig, past California Superintendent of Public Instruction that reads: “A MUST-READ FOR ANYONE ATTEMPTING TO IMPROVE OUR SCHOOLS.” (Apparently Honig’s emphasis.) However, there is a serious problem here. Mr. Bill Honig was not sufficiently influenced by this book to affect even his own moral choices.

Bill Honig was later convicted on four felony counts of conflict of interest. A Sacramento County jury of five men and seven women reached the verdict after fewer than three hours of deliberation. Mr. Honig had used his office to steer lucrative public contracts to an education foundation, Quality Education Project (QEP), headed by his wife. Nancy Honig ran QEP out of their San Francisco home. Question: If Bill Honig could not improve his moral choices after reading this book, how can he or we expect any different from our children? When will Christians make a public stand to teach morality per God’s plan?

What is God’s plan to inculcate values into children?

>“Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God, the LORD is one.  
>Love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength.  
>These commandments that I give you today are to be upon your hearts.  
>Impress them on your children. Talk about them when you sit at home and when you walk along the road, when you lie down and when you get up.  
>Tie them as symbols on your hands and bind them on your foreheads.  
>Write them on the doorframes of your houses and on your gates.”

Moses in Deuteronomy 6:4-9 (NIV) ~ 1405 B.C.

Does God’s method of teaching values, involving all of life, sound fanatical? Do evangelicals really believe that a one hour per week Sunday school class, even with an added Christian youth activity night, is going to be deemed in obedience to our Lord on this matter? Are we not lawless and godless if we compromise with the godless humanists in any attempt to impress values in a secular fashion? And why even try to compromise and exclude God, when history, present social indicators, and leading humanists have concurred that godless morality is fruitless?

This now is going to raise another question. The Chair of Character Development at the U.S. Air Force Academy asked the question in his article titled: “How Can We Teach
Ethics in a Secular Setting?

He claimed that “a public and secular beginning to ethics education” is to answer the question: “What do I owe to what I believe, after serious and sustained reflection, is good, true and beautiful?” His key arguments centered around what individuals owe to those that came before them and to those that will come after them. Even here this secular ethic is not taking hold, or is it?

The Academy has had sex-assault problems for years. Evidently these cadets have had sustained reflection on what is beautiful for too long. Maybe they have simply followed through with their natural desires? And maybe what they thought they owed those that would follow was the result of a naturally felt instinct to pass life on to any offspring that would happen to result. Therefore, in a secular society where relativism is acceptable, it is impossible to inculcate meaningful ethics of real social value. This decadent behavior now seems to force a change in the question from “how can we teach ethics in a secular setting” to why even try to teach ethics in a secular setting? A school choice policy would enable meaningful ethics education without forcing religion on anyone. The cadets should have had this educational option long before they came to the U.S. Air Force Academy.

Where is the religious left’s cry for religious tolerance in our government schools? The religious left initiated legal protests because they believed Air Force Academy policy in Colorado Springs, Colorado, favored the evangelical influence. Source: “Religious Tolerance Advances at AFT,” The Gazette, 12/17/2009, pg A6. Obviously religious balance is not the left’s concern, but who has the primary influence. If religious tolerance was the real concern, there would be no complaint against anyone’s religious efforts, evangelicals included. It is a very sad fact that the religious left has been more active to promote their religion in the public square than evangelicals. Evangelicals need to reevaluate their religious freedoms again. If Christian teachers and students are not as free in the public expression of their faith as the humanist teachers and students, then evangelicals do not have the religious freedom they think have. We are second-class citizens.

***

Columnist Vin Suprynowiza in an article titled: “Anti-drug Programs in Schools Haven’t Shown Their Worth,” stated that the DARE or Drug Abuse (sometimes Awareness) Resistance Education found a place in 80 percent of the nation’s school districts and it involved more than 50,000 police officers. “...The program consumed ever larger chunks of taxpayer funding, and it never actually worked. Louisville, Kentucky, dumped DARE after finding it to be ineffective in 1996.” Boulder dropped DARE in 1998, Minneapolis

---

[G] The Chair made a common philosophical error: "The United States does not have an established or state religion." Secularism is mistakenly taken to be religiously neutral. Since secularism attempts to answer the same set of life questions, but in humanistic terms, it is as religious as any other. Secular humanism is anything but neutral. Belief in godlessness is a non-traditional religious belief, nonetheless, that is loaded with faith in the non-observable. Many Unitarian ministers are seven-day atheists. Humanist’s organizations also have 501c3 tax-exemption status just as churches do.

[H] See Appendix D: Loss of Christian Liberty
in 1999, then Cincinnati and Dayton, Ohio, in 2002, “...as study after study showed little or no decrease in long-term likelihood to indulge in drug use among DARE graduates, when compared to control groups.”

All this should be compared against the success rate of Teen Challenge, a faith-based program that is the oldest, largest, and most successful program of its kind anywhere in the world. For the origins and history of Teen Challenge see the book *The Cross and the Switchblade* by Reverend David Wilkerson. The reader is encouraged to visit their website: www.teenchallenge.com.

Wendy Zoba reminds us in her *Day of Reckoning* of C.S. Lewis’ comment on this question of being good without God. “The practical result of an education without ‘objective value’ – moral absolutes—’must be the destruction of the society which accepts it.’”

Sociologist James Davison Hunter in *The Death of Character* concurs. “We say we want a renewal of character in our day but we don’t really know what we ask for. To have a renewal of character is to have a renewal of a creedal order that constrains, limits, binds, obligates, and compels. This price is too high for us to pay. We want character but without unyielding conviction; we want virtue but without particular moral justifications that invariably offend; we want good without having to name evil; we want decency without the authority to insist upon it; we want moral community without any limitations to personal freedom. In short, we want what we cannot possibly have on the terms that we want it.”

Robert Bork, in *Slouching Towards Gomorrah*, writes, “James Q. Wilson argues in *The Moral Sense* that people have a natural moral sense that is in part biological and in part derives from family life and natural human sociability. He does not deny religion a role but does not discuss it. In *On Character*, however, he refers to ‘processes of habituation that even in the absence of religious commitment lead to temperance, fidelity, moderation, and the acceptance of personal responsibility.’ The question is, of course, whether secular habituation can sustain itself over generations. I was inclined at one time to think that it could, that each generation would teach its children virtues that they in turn would pass to their offspring. We all know persons without [traditional] religious belief who nevertheless display all the virtues we associate with [traditional] religious teaching. That might seem to suggest that [traditional] religion is unnecessary to morality, but the counter argument is that such people are living on the moral capital of prior [traditional] religious generations. Since secular habituation is grounded only in tradition, that moral capital will be used up eventually, having nothing to replenish it, and we will see a culture such as the one we are entering.” (In any culture that questions absolutes, even traditional beliefs will erode away.)

Bork continues by explaining, “This is not to dismiss Wilson’s persuasive showing that humans have a natural moral sense, but the evidence so far suggests rather strongly that the natural moral sense is not of itself adequate to provide the level of morality necessary to save a culture. Wilson himself suggests that conclusion: *Having thought about the*
matter for many years, I can find no complete explanation for the worldwide increase in crime rates that does not assign an important role to a profound cultural shift in the strength of either social constraints or internal conscience or both, and I can find no complete explanation of that cultural shift that does not implicate to some important degree our convictions about the sources and importance of moral sentiments. [Bork explains] The natural sources of moral sentiments that he [Wilson] discusses are, presumably, what they always have been. Thus, something additional must be found that accounts not only for rising crime rates but for the more general cultural degeneration that is the subject of this book [Slouching Towards Gomorrah]. I find it difficult to imagine what that something else might be, for America, other than the ebbing of religious faith.”

Sociologist James Davison Hunter’s assessment of our present culture of VOID is becoming evident. “The social and cultural conditions that make character possible are no longer present and no amount of political rhetoric, legal maneuvering, education policy making, or money can change that reality. Its time has passed.”

Hunter continues, “Character is formed in relation to convictions and is manifested in the capacity to abide by those convictions even in, especially in, the face of temptation. This being so, the demise of character begins with the destruction of creeds, the convictions, and the ‘god-terms’ that made those creeds sacred to us and inviolable within us.”

However, Hunter is too quickly bypassing the social effect of negative education policy that has been so destructive of creeds and convictions. If such can influence a culture and society negatively, why not reverse the policy to encourage the positive? Our present society is the product of humanists that have been subtly and politically creating with unrelenting perseverance for decades while Christians have slept on their opportunities to communicate the evil results of such atheistic and agnostic public policies. Both humanists and Christians are to be blamed.

Should we be surprised by school violence from godless children or the sexual exploitation of children by male and female godless teachers? If we really want to eliminate bazaar behavior, depravity, and decadence, then we need to simply and seriously return to God and seek ways and public policies to encourage others to do this as well. The way to proceed without forcing religion on everyone, as the godless humanists are currently forcing their philosophy of VOID on children, is to adopt a school choice policy. If such a policy was in place and Christian schools offered something that was perceived to be of value by un-churched parents, Christians everywhere would find new opportunities for evangelism that would be unprecedented.

---

[I] Hunter’s interpretation of policy making may be limited to the imposition of moral laws via the Legislature. His assessment on this level is correct—its time has passed for the creation of a moral culture. However, if education policy enabled school choice options with convictions, creeds, and the “god-terms” that Hunter states are so important to establishing character, then meaningful education policy making opportunities have not passed. While our Founding Fathers were serious with this level of education policy making which had positive social results, our generation has forgotten all this. We have failed to implement the necessary public education policy in the first place.
In Charles Dickens, *A Christmas Carol*, Scrooge is intoxicated by his selfishness and blinded by his greed. Scrooge was awakened to the concept that each day's acts and words forge links in a chain that he must drag around as memories for eternity. C.S. Lewis’ *Mere Christianity*, explained, "Each decision, act, conversation, makes a mark on the soul." And the literary critic Joe Wheeler pointed out, "Singly, these marks are not very significant, but over time they tend to cluster, and these clusters become habits, and habits evolve into character, and character eventually determines one's eternal destiny."  

It took a visitation of the spirit to awaken Scrooge to the very significance of his life choices. In the same light, it will take a visitation of the Spirit of the Living God, to awaken evangelicals to the consequences of their apathy, compromises, and truncated spirituality as well. We have compromised too long with the secularists by mistakenly believing secularism was philosophically and religiously neutral.

**More Prophets**

Over four hundred years ago, the Protestant reformer, Martin Luther, clearly projected our social problems. “I am much afraid that schools will prove to be great gates of hell unless they diligently labor in explaining the Holy Scriptures, engraving them in the hearts of youth. I advise no one to place his child where the scriptures do not reign paramount. Every institution in which men are not increasingly occupied with the word of God must become corrupt.”

William H. McGuffey, a Presbyterian clergyman and educator, in 1854 predicted our culture and society today based on a public policy of humanistic secular evangelism. He said, “If you can induce a community to doubt the genuineness and authenticity of the Scriptures; to question the reality and obligations of religion; to hesitate, undecided, whether there is any such thing as virtue or vice; whether there be an eternal state of retribution beyond the grave; or whether there exists any such being as God, you have broken down the barriers of moral virtue and hoisted the floodgates of immorality and crime.”

“The hottest places in Hell are reserved for those who in time of great moral crises maintain their neutrality.” Dante Aleghieri

Dante must have read the minor prophet Obadiah. This also is God’s view toward those apathetic individuals claiming neutrality: “On the day you stood aloof while strangers carried off his wealth and foreigners entered his gates and cast lots for Jerusalem, you were like one of them.” Obadiah 1:11 (NIV) Note carefully that God views apathetic people as equivalent to an attack on innocent people. If God judges the attackers, then God will judge the apathetic and neutrality claimers as well.

By not opposing the humanist’s non-neutral secular agenda, evangelicals will be judged by God as though they too participated in the humanist’s sins of atheistic and agnostic indoctrination of the children.
“He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathered not with me scattereth abroad.” Jesus the Christ - Matthew 12:30 (KJV)

The prophet Hosea said to God’s people that had ignored God’s law, that God will ignore their children. (Hosea 4:6)

It has been the religious beliefs of the atheists and agnostics that have been the indoctrinating policy of public education. This has been unopposed for a variety of reasons. Do we dare home-school and build schools for our children only? We need a new missionary mindset for inculcating godly values in America’s youth that would choose it. Do we dare be any less committed than the religious left? We need to be as attractive toward this end as possible. By failing here, we have failed to be the preserving elements in our corrupting world. We have lost our saltiness, and in Christ’s words, “We are good for nothing and are to be thrown out as trash.” (Author’s paraphrase of Matthew 5:13.) Our lukewarm, compromising influence will earn the judgment of Christ. Despite evangelical claims of spirituality, we will be judged godless since Jesus Christ is not the Lord of all our lives – private and public.

“So, because you are lukewarm—neither hot nor cold—I am about to spit you out of my mouth.” Jesus the Christ - Revelation 3:16 (NIV)

Evangelicals have been lukewarm toward real Christian education options far too long. This lukewarm attitude will also merit God’s judgment.

We can now give another answer to the second fundamental question:

**QUESTION:** What are the social ramifications for any secular society?

**THIRD ANSWER:** A secular society is a godless society that yields decadence in all areas of life – political, social, legal, and economical. And decadence breeds even more godlessness. As more people come to believe in this VOID, society becomes even more decadent. Crime, violence, unemployment, and greed are the results. It’s impossible to expect children or anyone to behave morally without God as the basis. Put the same temptation pressures upon both theist and atheist. Empirical social evidence shows that beliefs both traditional and non-traditional effect moral choices and lifestyles. Atheistic decadence will increase economic stress as citizens are pressured to pay for social solutions related to crime, abortion, homelessness, unemployment, broken families and unpaid child support. Expect increased taxation and decreased freedoms as the ungodly win public support for socialistic programs with facades of relief.

"Because of the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold,”
Jesus the Christ - Matthew 24:12 (NIV)

Where there is no revelation, the people cast off restraint; but blessed is he who keeps the law. Solomon - Proverbs 29:18 (NIV)
Why evangelicals are guilty:

We have been apathetic in bringing right and just policies to our gates of public education. We have compromised God’s instructions on the imparting of values to children and have instead adopted the godless secularists’ methods. Not wanting to impose our religion, we have accepted the godless secularist’s definition of neutrality which isn’t. This has resulted in us and our children being the recipients of their non-traditional religious indoctrination of atheistic and agnostic godlessness. Some have retreated with their children to safer environments. This is understandable. But the time is upon us to encourage a missionary mindset that will help rescue others that are trapped in godless secularism.

We have failed to communicate how values in a vacuum are in vain. Moral expectations in a secular environment are deceiving. Besides the newspaper, sociological data exist to help us communicate how expectations of a God-based morality outperform an atheistic philosophy. Every contemporary social and historic indicator, leading Christian thinker, and even some humanistic social experts confess that values in a vacuum are fruitless and therefore do nothing to impede death to the soul, the mind, the body, and to all society.

In Conclusion: If the rejection of God is our public education policy, should a polarized congress and country, stagnant economy, polluted culture, greedy and hording business leaders, or a violent and decadent society surprise us? The lesson of Columbine’s massacre is not just that atheism leads to criminal activity, but that godlessness can influence a significant minority to torture the majority.

“When the foundations are being destroyed, what can the righteous do?”

Psalm 11:3 (NIV)

What should Bill and Irene do?

They love their neighborhood public school and desire their children to be witnesses for Jesus there. Bill and Irene need to understand that Eric and Dylan’s parents were also satisfied with their neighborhood school just as other Columbine parents who lost children in that massacre. The dangers of atheistic secularism or the philosophy of VOID can be so subtle. While no one may be successful in changing Bill and Irene’s minds about their “good” neighborhood school, Bill and Irene need to consider at least the plight of children in other schools that are humanistically abusive.

Bill and Irene may argue that such humanistic indoctrination is not in their school. Their child even has a Christian teacher. However, Bill and Irene need to carefully consider the proper God-pleasing response to the plight of children that are trapped in abusive humanistic schools. Even if humanism is not overtly taught at their school, Christianity is not taught and on this basis it is foolish to think that positive character education is
even possible. Can one ever expect godly values to be caught for life in a vacuum without God? Their school may even appear neutral toward traditional religion. It’s only a matter of time, before their children will experience hostility against their Christian faith. In the meantime, the supposedly school silence on traditional religious beliefs will in time encourage some children to begin interpreting such beliefs as of secondary importance. If the important is emphasized, why not suspect the non-important to be deemphasized. This too will have subtle negative effects on character education and lifestyle choices.

This chapter’s thesis shows the futility of teaching character without God as the basis. Bill and Irene will eventually have to face the problem of humanistic abuse in their school and on their children. It’s only a matter of time. The abuses will come in the form of raw ideas of decadent individualism or in criminal acts. They will then wish for a school choice option which includes anything but forced government education. In Woodbridge, New Jersey, a ten-year-old boy was charged with murder for allegedly luring a three-year-old boy out of a library, beating him with a baseball bat and sexually assaulting him before dumping the body in a ditch. The charges were filed hours after the victim, Amir Beeks, died. Why would anyone vote against the freedom to choose a real moral education? Vote for school choice and then continue with the school one already enjoys. Why give your freedom to choose to a teachers’ union?

Ronald Nash’s book, The Closing of the American Heart - What’s Really Wrong with America’s Schools explains what’s happening. Nash wrote, “False values and perverse ideas are being fed to our children everyday in school. Traditional values and learning skills have been discredited and discarded. In their place, anti-Christian values and ideas are being relentlessly drilled into the minds of our impressionable children.” The popular theologian R.C. Sproul commented on Nash’s book. “I rarely get as excited about a book as I am about this one... This book is radical in the sense that it gets to the root of the crisis we face in education.” Is it even possible to expect children to grow up as responsible moral adults if they are taught anti-Christian values in their public school? Now consider the effect this will have on increased neighborhood crime. Why should God continue to guard anyone’s life if people have a cavalier attitude toward God’s heart and the life-threatening result of atheistic secularism? God will let us reap what we have sown (Job 4:8, Hosea 8:7, Galatians 6:7-8). No one and no child will be safe.

Bill and Irene need to carefully consider how much more effective multitudes of schools of choice could be for the witness of Jesus Christ than the meager efforts of their children against Master-degreed humanists and their muzzled Christian teacher. Bill and Irene should fight hard for school choice so that children that are trapped in the humanistic abusive schools Nash describes may be liberated and free to go to a Christian school. As they cast their vote they should ask themselves--shouldn’t all children be free to choose a Christ-honoring school? What would Jesus say and do about this?

And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

Jesus the Christ - Mark 9:42 (KJV)
Suppose a person voted against school choice. Such a person also voted to continue the humanistic offensives on children. It’s amazing the number of Christian parents that think the government schools just need a little fine tuning, like removing this offensive book, allowing prayer in school or on the football field, or permitting Christian graduation speeches. Why are we fooling ourselves? Much more must be done to inculcate Christian values for those that will choose it. Anti-school choice continues the present abusive humanistic indoctrination policy. Is it even possible for Jesus to view such a voter against school choice any differently from the one who offends and indoctrinates children directly in atheism? Is it even possible to have God’s blessings if one does not also possess a passion after God’s heart? Without this passion, how can Bill and Irene ever expect God’s blessing on them, their children, or their country? Go ahead and put in fifty hours a week trying to get ahead and faithfully attend church every week. You will not have the blessings of God if you are not serious with God’s agenda. Such a person is wasting their time.

If you say, “But we knew nothing about this,” does not he who weighs the heart perceive it? Does not he who guards your life know it? Will he not repay each person according to what he has done? Solomon - Proverbs 24:12 (NIV)

While Bill and Irene may not perceive humanistic indoctrination for any child at their school, Bill and Irene need to remember that values in a vacuum are in vain. It is like building a house upon sand. Their house may stand now, but in time it will fall. Our society is already falling into decadence because evangelicals have lost their passion for God’s passion in all of life.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. Jesus the Christ - Matthew 7:26-27 (KJV)

Suggested Scripture Reading:
How important are Godly values?

Resources:
DVDs
1) America’s Godly Heritage, David Barton
WallBuilders, Inc.
P.O. Box 397, Aledo, TX, 76008, (817) 441-6044
Website: www.wallbuilders.org
Reviews significant history and judicial tyranny’s effect on national morality.
2) *The Emperor’s Club*  Go to:  [http://www.theemperorsclub.com](http://www.theemperorsclub.com)

*William Hundert (Kevin Kline), St. Benedict’s assistant headmaster, practices what he teaches. Striving to inspire his students to live rightly…”* This is an entertaining [and secular] movie with a surprising end. Questions to ask after the movie: Who and in what way was the primary teacher of values? Who influenced positively and who negatively? Who won, who lost, and why?

**Videos** (Not certain if available in DVD format)

3) *Public Education: The Hidden Agenda Program* #9339 (VD9)  9/26/93

- Coral Ridge Ministry, PO Box 1920, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida 33302
- Phone: 1-800-988-7884, Email: letters@coralridge.org; Website: www.coralridge.org


- Eagle Forum, PO Box 618, Alton, IL 62002, Website: www.eagleforum.org

**Audio:**

*Truth in Education* from Dr. D. James Kennedy’s radio ministry Truths that Transform, PO Box 33 Ft. Lauderdale, Fl 33308, Website: www.coralridge.org

This is a 4 part audio collection featuring a) *OBE in Action* by Brannon House, b) *The NEA* by Sam Blumenfeld, c) *Failure of Humanistic Education* by William Coulson, & d) *Train up A Child* by Dr. Kennedy

**Booklets:**

1) *SIECUS (Sexuality Information and Education Council of the United States)*

*You Won’t Believe What They Want to Teach Your Kids*, Ronald A. Reno

(A Focus on The Family Report – A Matter of Facts)

2) *Restoring America’s Christian Education*, Stephen McDowell

- Providence Foundation, Charlottesville, Virginia


**Books:**

1) *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil*, James Davison Hunter,

- Published by Basic Books, A Member of the Perseus Books Group

*A Brave exploration of spinelessness and self-deception in the dominant moral sectors of our time.*  Michael Novak

2) *The Abolition of Man*, C.S. Lewis

- Collier Books, MacMillian Publishing Company
3) *Bending The Twig*, Augustin G. Rudd  
   – The Revolution in Education and its Effect on Our Children,  
   Published by: New York Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution

4) *None Dare Call It Education*, John A. Stormer  
   – The documented account of how education “reforms” are undermining academics and traditional values. Liberty Bell Press, Florissant, Missouri


6) *A Generation Deceived*, Kurt Billings  
   - What is being taught in your schools?  
   Solid Rock Books, Inc., 979 Young Street, Suite E, Woodburn, Oregon 97071  
   (503) 981-0705

7) *Let My Children Go*, E Ray Moore, Jr., Th.M.  
   - Why Parents Must Remove Their Children From Public Schools Now  
   Published by: Gilead Media, Columbia, SC

8) *The Harsh Truth About Public Schools*, Bruce N. Shortt  
   Chalcedon Foundation, Vallecito, California

9) *What Are They Teaching Our Children?*, Mel and Norma Gabler  
   Educational Research Associates, PO Box 7518, Longview, Tx 75607

10) *Schools in Crisis: Training for Success or Failure?* – A Teacher Investigates The Educational System From Within And Offers Practical Solutions, Carl Sommer  
    Cahill Publishing Company, Houston Texas

**Article:**
   This is a Breakpoint resource (1/19/2002). Go to www.breakpoint.org

**Organizations:**

**Websites:**
1) www.rescuyourchild.com

2) Alliance for the Separation of School and State,  
   1071 N. Fulton St., Fresno, CA 93728  (559) 499-1776  
   Email: contact@schoolandstate.org  
   Website: www.GetTheKidsOut.org
3) Alliance For School Choice  
1660 L. Street, NW, Suite 1000, Washington, DC 20036  
Phone: 202-280-1990   Email: info@allianceForSchoolChoice.org  
Website: www.allianceforschoolchoice.org

4) Citizens for Excellence in Education, Dr. Robert Simonds  
www.nace-cee.org  
email: cee4kids@aol.com

5) Colorado Kids Can’t Wait  
http://coloradokidscantwait.org/

6) Frontline Ministries, Inc., P.O. Box 12072, Columbia, SC 28211, Phone: 1-803-714-1744, Email: exodusmandate@gmail.com,  
Website: www.exodusmandate.org

Michael Ramirez – Creators Syndicate
Chapter 6: Evangelical Mistakes

A Common Misconception

It’s common for evangelicals to believe that relationship building is essential for evangelism. While this is a viable working model, sufficient scriptural examples show that this is not a universal or even necessary factor for successful evangelism. The phenomenal growth of the Church on the Day of Pentecost is one such example. People were attracted to a spiritual phenomenon, not relationships (Acts 2:41). Other examples of ministry without serious relationship building are: Paul’s Mars Hill confrontation (Acts 17:34), Philip with the Ethiopian Eunuch (Acts 8:29-31), and Apollos (Acts 18:27-28). In all these examples we see apologetic evangelism at its best. Apollos was especially successful in massive apologetic evangelism.

27 And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace: 28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, showing by the scriptures that Jesus was Christ. Acts 18:27-28 (KJV).

In these biblical examples no significant time was given to serious relationship building. Instead the Holy Spirit moved through the messenger via an apologetic format and souls responded. The Barna Research Group has confirmed that the church that puts its total evangelistic emphasis on relationship building is overlooking a segment of unchurched adults that are less relationally inclined:

*Our data show unchurched adults are not as relational as are churched adults and therefore are less compelled to join a faith group because of friendships. It seems that, in some ways, churches have already attracted the people who are driven by emotional and relational needs. Those who are less interactive interpret the relational bent of churches to be their primary thrust and thus conclude that churches have little value. Given their personality traits and attitudinal leanings, to attract the unchurched a church must intentionally and aggressively promote and provide options that meet non-relational needs.*

Who are these people that have non-emotional and non-relational needs? And what could their needs be? Many high-tech professionals fit easily in this group. They have all the friends they dare have time for. But there is something they do lack, that churches tend to overlook. This would be their intellectual needs. Why not provide something these people seek, like apologetic answers with evidence? Go to any college debate on the existence of God or intelligent design. The auditoriums will typically be packed with intellectual unbelievers. I witnessed one large college auditorium once where the fire code was obviously ignored by the crowded students sitting on the floor. There were no vacant seats in the auditorium anywhere. One would think evangelical leaders would take notice of all this spiritual hunger and provide more such opportunities to debate and test what’s real. This was Paul’s style for growing Christian churches (Acts 17:2, Thessalonians 5:21). Why have we forgotten this?
So your neighbor’s teenage son cuts your grass from time to time as a neighborly surprise. You neighbor invites you to dinner often. He surprises you and your wife with tickets to the next game now and then. You’ve never had such an outgoing friendly and very personal neighbor like this before. And you never know what nice thing he is going to do next. However, there is just one issue that also makes him different. He talks about cute little fairies. He’s convinced they’re real. Will his friendship evangelism and positive relationship building convince you that fairies are real too? Of course not.

Ministers constantly remind us of the importance of building relationships but are consistently silent about being trained in apologetics. This is seriously out of balance. After a relationship is built, will any of these Christians have answers to the questions that will be raised?

**Christian Witnessing - Columbine Style**

Eric and Dylan’s friend, Brooks Brown, briefly mentioned the “Christian” witness that he had observed at Columbine: "They would use quotes from the Bible to throw insults at me. I’d seen them try to force their beliefs on other students, guilting them into it, pressuring them to join up. They didn't want to hear what you thought about God, or the world. All they wanted to hear was 'Jesus Christ is my Savior’ - and if we didn't agree, we weren't worth associating with... I can't think of any time before that when a Christian asked me about my beliefs without interrupting constantly, or running right over my ideas, or just sitting there and snickering."²

Could it be possible that Dylan and Eric were also offended and provoked by the "Christian” witness that Brooks described?

Douglas Groothuis, professor of Denver Seminary, also noticed evangelical failures. “Not enough evangelicals are willing to present and defend their faith in challenging situations, whether at school, at work, or in other public settings. The temptation is to privatize faith, to insulate and isolate it from public life entirely. Yes, we are Christians (in our hearts), but we have difficulty engaging anyone with what we believe and why we say we believe.”³ Dr. Groothuis reminds us of apostle Paul’s advice. “Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time. Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man” Colossians 4:5-6 (KJV).

Two main questions still echoed from the Columbine High School Massacre: “Do you believe in God?” and “Why?” These questions were tantalizingly repeated among selected students. We know because these questions were reported by multiple others. (See Appendix C: The Columbine God Question – Why it’s Debated and the Ramifications.) It is doubtful this was the first time Eric or Dylan had ever asked such questions. Since the famous British atheist, Antony Flew, converted from atheism to theism because of intelligent design evidence, it is unfortunate many Christian students are ignorant of this evidence. The Columbine students are not unique in this weakness. This is a common evangelical failure of not having intelligent reasons for the faith (1 Peter 3:15). It’s very possible that the Columbine Massacre could have been avoided
altogether had Christians provided loving, intelligent, and satisfying responses to the question of God’s existence earlier. At the very least, Christians should have responded with questions to discern the worldview of their fellow students and then refocused their questions to cause self-doubt of such worldviews.

The writer of Hebrews said that a believer could be “unskillful in the word of righteousness” (Hebrews 5:13b). Unfortunately too many evangelicals are so unskilled.

In Charles R. Swindoll’s book: The Church Awakening – An Urgent Call For Renewal, Revered Swindoll explained, “In late 2005, Awana [a Baptist youth organization] asked two questions of a hundred Bible colleges and seminaries: (1) ‘Do you measure the Bible knowledge of incoming freshmen?’ (2) ‘If so, have you seen a trend in their scores over the past ten years?’ Fifty-eight schools responded. A number of responses included comments such as these:

*The general consensus of the Bible and theology faculty is that there has been a marked decrease in the level of Bible knowledge in recent years. It seems that even students who have gone to church all their lives are not as biblically literate as students in years gone by.  (David Reese, Toccoa Falls College)*

*I have been teaching at Puget Sound Christian College for 23 years in the Bible department. The level of Bible knowledge for incoming students has decreased dramatically over this period. Our assumption now is that incoming freshmen know nothing about the Bible, and that we must start at the most basic level. (Mark S. Krause, Dean, Puget Sound Christian College)[A]*

If this is the response of students interested in Bible colleges, what is the response of Christian students with no such attractions, and how effective is their Christian witness? If students are lacking in basic biblical knowledge, you can be sure their apologetic skills are worse. Lack of apologetic training is not solely the students’ fault. It’s a bad reflection upon parents, Sunday school teachers, youth leaders, and ministers as well. It is clearly disobedience to our Lord’s command to love the Lord with all our minds:

Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.  Jesus the Christ – Matthew 22:37 (KJV)

There are several reasons why many Christian youth are so poorly trained in apologetics to ask and answer such questions:

- A minimal number of Sunday schools and youth groups offer only a token apologetic response. Most have no such training. Too often the youth pastor is fearful that if the youth meeting isn’t fun, the youth won’t come back. Gary DeMar says that ‘Most church ‘youth programs’ are entertainment gatherings with a ‘devotional’ to give them legitimacy.’[5] Douglas Groothuis, professor at

---

[A] ©2009 Larry Fowler. *Raising a Modern-Day Joseph* published by David C. Cook. Publisher permission required to reproduce. All rights reserved.
Denver Seminary, admitted “[M]any major churches and parachurch organizations virtually ignore apologetics.”

- Many ministers avoid scientific apologetics altogether because of the potential for conflict between the old-earth and young-earth creationists or simply because they are not trained to instruct it. Despite the fact the heavens declare the glory of God (Psalm 19:1), scientific apologetics is perceived to be lacking in spirituality for a church event. Some ministers also share the fear of sponsoring a boring service to a culture that seeks entertainment over learning.

- There is a long history of anti-intellectualism among evangelicals, and this varies among denominations and churches within the same denomination. Francis Schaeffer, Os Guiness, Rick Nanez and others have noted the history of anti-intellectualism among evangelicals. Consequently, many evangelicals are bound by this cultural tradition. J.P. Moreland stated that “Anti-intellectualism has not merely impacted the lives of believers within the bosom of Christ. It has had serious repercussions in the culture at large. As anti-intellectualism has softened our impact for Christ, so too has it contributed to the secularization of the culture.”

- There are multiple mistaken theological interpretations that either negate or minimize the importance of apologetics in the minds of many evangelicals. Next, we will review just some of these mistaken scriptural interpretations that fortify an inhibiting mindset via a false sense of humility and truncated spirituality.

**The Sanctification of the Evangelical Inhibiting Mindset**

“For since the creation of the world God’s invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.” Apostle Paul – Romans 1:20 (NIV)

The popular evangelical interpretation of Paul’s famous passage to the Romans is that everyone has the capability to see evidence for God from God’s creation already. Therefore, we really have no further need to engage in apologetics, since God has already provided universal evidence for everyone to clearly see him. Therefore conversion is really a matter of a person’s heart and will alone. Their intellects have already been informed.

Evangelicals are seriously mistaken here. Evangelicals fail to discern that Paul’s Holy Spirit-inspired message to the Romans was true from the creation of the world to until 1859, when Charles Darwin published *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life*. From 1859 onward things began to change, slowly at first, but now have accelerated in our day. Since Darwin’s time there has been a growing atheistic and naturalistic mindset that has taken people captive prisoners. (The apostle Paul also explained how this is done: “The
god of this world has blinded their minds” 2 Corinthians 4:4. See also Colossians 2:8 and 2 Timothy 2:24-26.) With this atheistic, naturalistic blinding bias, many people are not able to clearly see God’s eternal power and divine nature in creation. Since they can no longer see creation as an act of God, Paul’s famous address to the Romans (Romans 1:20) is no longer true for many people today. Therefore, many are without the testimony of God’s powerful creative witness in nature; they cannot see it because they are blinded by atheistic, materialistic naturalism. The biochemist and agnostic Michael Denton asserts that “the triumph of evolution meant the end of the traditional belief in the world as a purposeful created order – the so-called teleological [study of evidence of design or purpose in nature] outlook which had been predominant in the western world for two millennia. According to Darwin, all the design, order and complexity of life and the eerie purposefulness of living systems were the result of a simple blind random process – natural selection. Before Darwin, men had believed a providential intelligence had imposed its mysterious design upon nature, but now chance ruled supreme. God’s will was replaced by the capriciousness of a roulette wheel. The break with the past was complete.”

Dr. Denton explained that The Origin of Species was a “revolutionary view of the living world which implied that all the diversity of life on earth had resulted from natural and random processes and not, as was previously believed, from the creative activity of God. The acceptance of this great claim and the consequent elimination of God from nature was to play a decisive role in the secularization of western society.”

What is so strikingly different in our time as compared to Paul’s is that many people have been taken prisoners (2 Timothy 2:24-26) via a mindset of atheistic/agnostic evolutionary materialism. Such was not the case in Paul’s day. Many evangelicals fail to see how this naturalistic mindset can be so inhibiting when they focus on the randomness of evolution. This is also part of the evangelical problem. Natural selection is not random, only mutations are. Natural selection is the non-random part of evolution. It says that if a favorable mutation (slight change) should arise (randomly) then it will be passed on to the offspring because the favorable mutation offered an advantage for the parent’s survival. This is how natural selection has replaced the need for divine creative power. It’s been shown to work on a limited small scale. When this concept is coupled with empirical scientific evidence of changes within species, then the Theory of Evolution begins to replace Genesis as the history for the origin and evolution of living things. Consequently, this also has a detrimental effect on the belief that the Bible is a valid source of history. This, therefore, explains the rampant secularism of western civilization.

Had the Church been more proactive, responsible, and consistent in showing how evolutionary faith was involved in this debate, we would not be as secularized as we are today. The evolutionary faith is the belief that the scientific evidence for microevolution (small-scale evolution) is adequate to explain the necessary changes involved with macroevolution (large-scale evolution). In other words, the popular evolutionary mindset is biased with the misleading idea that because some evolutionary transitions appear to be real, then all proposed transitions must be valid as well. Piecemeal slight variations have never been shown to account for all the necessary changes between proposed transitional forms. Not only are theoretical links missing, gaps in the fossil record are real. This is
because the proposed changes between significantly complex integrated biological systems involve multiple favorable simultaneous changes to preserve functionality in many cases.

The failure of the Church today is a failure of missed opportunities. It is asleep while the scientific evidence for God grows. The Church fails to realize how the latest scientific findings could reverse the social phenomena of secularization.

The thought insistently arises that some supernatural agency – or, rather, Agency – must be involved. Is it possible that suddenly, without intending to, we have stumbled upon scientific proof of the existence of a supreme being? Was it God who stepped in and so providentially crafted the cosmos for our benefit? George Greenstein, Astronomer

For the scientist who has lived by his faith in the power of reason, the story ends like a bad dream. He has scaled the mountains of ignorance, he is about to conquer the highest peak; as he pulls himself over the final rock, he is greeted by a band of theologians who have been sitting there for centuries. Robert Jastrow, Astronomer (Materialist & Agnostic)

The idea that God created the universe is a more respectable hypothesis today than at any time in the last 100 years. Frederick Burnham, Historian of Science

Note carefully that Romans 1:20 is invalid for many people today not because nature does not testify of God’s glory, but because people are blinded by an atheistic/agnostic worldview of materialistic naturalism. Before evangelicals reject this commentary, they should review Paul’s writings to Timothy on mind control. As you read the next scriptural passage, please note carefully Paul’s words that pertain to the mind. And as you read Paul’s description of Satan’s ability to take people captive, remember from Chapter 2 how students are being taken captive by their minds too. What a sad situation it is for anyone to be taken prisoner by Satan, especially when new scientific discoveries are giving more evidence for God than at any other time in history. Our government schools have become atheistic worldview prisons.

And the Lord’s servant must not quarrel; instead, he must be kind to everyone, able to teach, not resentful. Those who oppose him he must gently instruct, in the hope that God will grant them repentance leading them to a knowledge of the truth, and that they will come to their senses and escape from the trap of the devil, who has taken them captive to do his will (2 Timothy 2:24-26 NIV).

Here Paul instructed Timothy in how to liberate those that have been taken captive by their minds. Timothy was to “teach and instruct” so that “they will come to their senses.” This is how intellectuality becomes a spiritual activity of loving the Lord with all our minds. By doing this, Satan’s prisoners would come to the “knowledge of the truth.” And why not engage the unbelieving mind? Satan is the deceiver and the father of lies (John 8:44). This is how Satan takes people captive--by their minds. Obviously, the Christian must be able to teach / instruct in such a manner that Satan’s prisoners may
come to their senses (right mind) and escape the mind holding traps of the devil (1 Peter 3:15). This is how Holy Spirit-directed apologetics works. But what happens when Christians fail to follow Paul’s advice? Our government schools become atheistic prisons and students become tangled in an atheistic worldview.

People today cannot see the glories of God’s creation as Paul described in Romans 1:20 because they have been taken prisoners and blinded by atheistic naturalism. This is very much a result of our public policies that are politically determined by an atheistic minority and a sleeping evangelical majority. Prisoners of atheistic naturalism could become free if Christians would simply point to the resources that show the problems in evolution, share the growing scientific evidence for God, and then begin to oppose the politics of atheism in their “public” schools.

A Modern Example

Lee Strobel was an atheist that became a Christian. Charles Templeton was a Christian that became an agnostic. Strobel’s interview of Templeton illustrates the reason for Paul’s instructions to Timothy perfectly.

Templeton was once Billy Graham’s associate and preaching companion. Templeton confessed that he had growing doubts that resulted in him becoming an agnostic. His book is titled: Farewell to God: My Reasons for Rejecting the Christian Faith. Seemingly the final straw that broke his faith occurred when he saw a Life magazine photo of an African mother holding her dead baby in drought-stricken conditions. His question--"How could a loving God allow a poor African mother's child die of starvation when all they needed was rain?"

Strobel also asked Templeton if he would like to believe. "‘Of course!’ he exclaimed... ‘If I could, I would. I'm eighty-three years old. I’ve got Alzheimer’s. I’m dying, for goodness sake!’ And when the conversation turned to Jesus Christ and Strobel asked Templeton, ‘So how do you assess this Jesus?’ Templeton responded with positive accolades for Christ. ‘He was a moral genius. His ethical sense was unique. He is the most important human being who has ever existed.’ Then Templeton's voice began to crack and tears flooded his eyes. ‘I …miss…him!’ For a brief moment Templeton looked down and raised his left hand to shield his face. His shoulder bobbed as he wept. Then just as suddenly Templeton fought to compose himself."

All this adds meaning to the verse:

…that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will. Apostle Paul - 2 Timothy 2:26 (KJV).

Many evangelicals find Templeton’s reaction surprising. Evangelicals tend to believe that salvation is a matter of the heart (will and emotion) alone. Here Templeton’s heart and will were ready, but his mind was not. Those evangelicals that put the heart or will as the primary resistance or means of accepting salvation should be surprised.
Intellectual problems are “snares of the devil.” Not all lost souls are motivated by carnal desires or willful sinful defiance. Many have real intellectual problems with Christianity. Salvation involves the mind as well (Romans 12:2).

“It is not true that every intellectual question is a moral dodge.”

Francis A. Schaeffer

From the beginning of time to now, conversion has always involved both the will and intellect (Romans 12:1-2). People can never love what their minds reject. When Paul preached repentance, he used the Greek word metanoia. It means “change of mind.” Everyone knows that a caterpillar goes through a metamorphosis, or change in form, in becoming a butterfly. So when Paul said to repent, he was telling his Greek audience to change their minds.

So does this imply that a person’s mindset is simply a matter of willful choice again? Well, could you simply believe in little green leprechauns if a rich Irishman offered you a billion dollars to believe? Could you simply believe? Of course not. Now many people would be very motivated to believe in leprechauns, but this desire to believe is not the same as real belief in leprechauns. The best such a motivator could do is create an open and eager mindset to carefully search out reasons to believe in leprechauns. Only in this process could real belief be developed. This was Paul’s message. His listeners needed to be of a receptive mindset, carefully consider the evidence that Jesus was the Messiah, note the miraculous demonstrations of the Holy Spirit that followed Paul’s ministry, and then follow through with the right logical choice and change their minds.

“Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.”

Apostle Paul - 1 Thessalonians 5:21 (KJV)

When evangelicals become willing to understand the intellectual traps of the skeptics, evangelism will go to the next God-pleasing level of commitment. Are we ready to seek for the answers ourselves? When was the last time we wrestled with a perplexing issue and searched diligently for God’s answer? So where does one begin to address the mind problems of the Templetons of our world? An excellent resource for answering Templeton’s dilemma is Gregory A. Boyd’s book: Is God to Blame?

**Another Verse that Falsely Sanctifies an Inhibiting Mindset**

Romans 1:20 is not the only verse evangelicals have mistakenly applied. Paul’s 1 Corinthians 2:4-5 passage has also sanctified an inhibiting mindset among many evangelicals.

“... my preaching was not with enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in the demonstration of the Spirit and of power: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.” Apostle Paul -1 Corinthians 2: 4-5 (KJV).
Consequently, many evangelicals mistakenly think that... *Faith should be based on the power of God only and not on any wisdom from men at all. This must also mean that one need not study to have answers for anyone. Neither is there any need to persuade anyone since it’s all up to the Holy Spirit.* Thus many evangelicals have interpreted Paul’s Corinthian response as favoring an anti-apologetic, anti-intellectual approach to evangelism. Evangelical voices publicly proclaim: *Faith should be based upon God’s Word and the Spirit alone. It should never rest upon intellectual arguments. If we could prove anything, what would be the need for faith? We don’t want this Sunday school class to be based on what someone learned from a book. We want it to be alive in the Spirit. I have only been called to preach the gospel. We are called to preach the simple gospel of Jesus Christ and Him crucified only. You can never argue anyone into heaven.*

*After the prophet Isaiah was inspired to write “come let us reason together” (Isaiah 1:18), after Jesus encouraged belief based upon the miracles (John 14:11), and after Paul’s instruction to test everything (1 Thessalonians 5:21), what is authentic biblical faith anyway—a leap in the dark? Holy Scriptures indicate otherwise.*

*What exactly did Kirk Cameron mean when he said, “How to share your faith effectively and biblically, to be able to reason with people, learn to circumnavigate – go around the person’s intellect”? How can one reason with anyone and at the same time circumnavigate around their intellect? Wasn’t this the Christian form of witnessing described in Brown’s book, No Easy Answers, that brought death to Columbine Christians?*

**Scriptural Problems – Is It a Contradiction or a Misunderstanding?**

If these popular interpretations and applications of Romans 1:20 and 1 Corinthians 2:4-5 are true, then why did the Holy Spirit inspire the same Paul to encourage Timothy to “teach and instruct” unbelievers in a hopeful process of freeing them from Satan’s mind-holding prison, as we already saw in 2 Timothy 2:24-26? Why did Paul tell Timothy “to study” in 2 Timothy 2:15? Why did the Holy Spirit inspire Peter to have answers? (See 1 Peter 3:15.)

*“Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” Apostle Paul - 2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV)*
“But in your hearts set apart Christ as Lord. Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect.” Apostle Peter - 1 Peter 3:15 (NIV)

Isn’t all this studying and preparation to give reasons for the faith just an attempt to cause faith to be based upon the wisdom of men? In contrast to popular evangelical interpretations of 1 Corinthians 2:4-5, Paul encouraged the Corinthians to argue persuasively:

“We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.”
2 Corinthians 10:5 (NIV)

“No one can demolish arguments, cast down imaginations or any idea against the knowledge of God, or even take thoughts captive toward the thinking of Christ without serious intellectual preparation and successfully arguing along with the work of the Holy Spirit.

So what was Paul's preaching style like?

“And he reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks.” Acts 18:4 (KJV)

“… but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.”
Acts 18:19b (KJV)

“Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men.”
2 Corinthians 5:11a (KJV)


“At Iconium Paul and Barnabas went as usual into the Jewish synagogue. There they spoke so effectively that a great number of Jews and Gentiles believed” Acts 14:1 (NIV). Amazingly, Paul’s preaching style involved logic, evidence, reasoning, disputing, persuading, and debating. And Luke thought Paul was effective. To the Jews, Paul showed how Jesus was the fulfillment of messianic prophecies. To the Greeks on Mars Hill, Paul used logic and reasoning.
Paul carefully considered his audience. He was very aware of the culture bias of each. He knew that the “Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom” (1 Corinthians 1:22). Both were apologetic approaches in Paul’s evangelistic style. He also said that he was a debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise (Romans 1:14). His testimony was that he became a Jew to those that were Jews and a Gentile to the Gentiles so that he might win some (1 Corinthians 9:19 - 22). This meant that Paul became like a Greek with the use of godly wisdom, when he talked to Greeks. When Paul was around Jews, he emphasized how Christ fulfilled the prophecies concerning the Messiah. This all gave evidence to the validity of God in Jesus Christ. These are all apologetic activities. Paul’s evangelistic style was definitely apologetic.

Let’s now go back again to the popular evangelical verse that’s used to discredit apologetics as a viable ministry all together: “... my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in the demonstration of the Spirit and of power: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.”

Apostle Paul -1 Corinthians 2: 4-5 (KJV)

With our added knowledge of Paul’s apologetic ministry, this Corinthian verse is beginning to look like a contradiction. So what is our problem? Did Paul change his mind on the best approach for evangelism? Let’s ask some more questions. Is this Corinthian passage a universal passage meant to describe how all evangelistic efforts are to be conducted, or did something unique happen in Paul’s Corinthian ministry? And what did Paul mean by “the wisdom of men” anyway?

In contrast to the popular evangelical view that says Paul was against wisdom, Paul simply meant that the Holy Spirit was so evident among the Corinthians in miraculous signs and wonders that Paul didn't need to convince them any further. This was the apostle’s point. In the mean time, no one seems to be asking if the Holy Spirit’s power is even present in the same evidential manner as it was in Paul’s ministry to the Corinthians and others (Acts 13:6-12, 14:3, 19:11-12, 28:8-9, 1 Corinthians 2:4, Hebrews 2:4).

When the Holy Spirit has already moved in the life of another, why would one even attempt to add more influence / proof / evidence? Can we say this today in our sphere of influence? Has the work of the Holy Spirit been as powerfully real for us as it was in Paul’s ministry? Miracles, signs, and wonders were all a natural part of Paul’s apologetic ministry. Yet we have grieved and hindered the work of the Spirit by our dull, anti-intellectual, un-biblical, apathetic, lack-of-disciplined and disobedient mindset toward studying all of God’s revelation, both special and general. Sadly, evangelicals are not as ready to be used by the Holy Spirit as we should be. Remember this same Holy Spirit-anointed Paul told Timothy to study (2 Timothy 2:15).

This brings us to that curious phrase “the wisdom of men.” What did Paul mean by this? Let’s first look at Paul’s famous Mars Hill speech.
A Different Demonstration of Spirit Power

The Corinthian form of evangelism with the "demonstration of the Spirit and of power" was not exactly repeated in the same format even for Paul while he stood on Mars Hill in the presence of the mocking philosophers and curious intellectuals. Yet the Spirit did operate even on Mars Hill because some believed (Acts 17:34). It is not possible for anyone to believe unless the Holy Spirit is involved and drawing them (John 6:44). However, the Spirit does not operate alone. A faithful witness is needed. (Romans 10:14-15) So in this light, it was the same Spirit, but a different manifestation. The Holy Spirit is much more willing to do His part than we are in doing our part. But note carefully, the Spirit requires an obedient, knowledgeable person. The Holy Spirit did not convince or convict by His presence alone. This time the Greek culture demanded and the Holy Spirit lovingly moved through an apologetic response. Paul was quick to recognize and meet this need by being an available instrument. Paul’s Holy Spirit directed Mars Hill response was not a presentation of the simple gospel of Jesus Christ only. In like manner evangelicals need to be available to the Holy Spirit’s promptings, and we need to be sensitive to seeker and skeptical questions. Clearly Paul’s evangelistic approach with the Corinthians was very different than it was with the Greeks on Mars Hill (Acts 17:16-34). On Mars Hill, Paul brought the Greeks attention to their culture—an altar with the inscription, "To the Unknown God." He referenced their poets and philosophers: “For in him we live and move and have our being.” [Epimenides] As some of your own poets have said, ‘We are his offspring’ [Aratus, Cleanthes]” 14 (Acts 17:28). Obviously, Paul was well read in his opponents’ literature. What strange behavior this is for one that is attributed to relying upon the Holy Spirit alone in evangelism. A survey by Pew Forum on Religion & Public Life (9/28/2010) found that atheists, agnostics, Jews, and Mormons outperformed Protestants and Roman Catholics in answering questions about major religions, while many respondents could not correctly give the most basic tenets of their own faiths. 15 Apparently evangelicals are not modeling Paul’s evangelistic style.

Now starting with these philosophers, Paul argued logically toward the truth of God’s word in the very next verse: “Therefore since we are God’s offspring, we should not think that the divine being is like gold or silver or stone—an image made by man’s design and skill” Acts 17:29 (NIV).

This was not Paul’s first approach with logic. “God who made the world needs nothing from us and thus does not live in temples built by us” (Acts 17:24). In other words, God transcends our understanding and our creations since we are God’s creation.

The result on Mars Hill was that some Greeks believed (Acts 17:34). While apparently Paul used logical arguments devoid of Jewish prophetic references with the Greeks, he used arguments that referenced Jewish prophets with the Corinthians. Most likely the Corinthians were a Jewish audience. “For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom” (1 Corinthians 1:22). Note his reference to “hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world” (1 Corinthians 2:6-8). This is still wisdom, but of a different type. The “ordained before the world” speaks of a foretelling event. Here Paul is referring to prophesy that the Jews would be open to investigating. Prophesy is "hidden
wisdom” because for many people without the knowledge of Christ’s fulfillment, such passages seem to be a mystery. However, for those that seek to understand, it will be openly revealed.

**Wisdom of Men**

Paul also drew a contrast between worldly wisdom of men separated from God and God’s wisdom in the same passage. (See 1 Corinthians 2: 6-7). So Paul was not against all wisdom as is mistakenly interpreted by too many. Wisdom of men is not academic or scientific knowledge per se.

“For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit.” Apostle Paul - 1 Corinthians 12:8 (KJV)

If God gave the “word of wisdom” or the “word of knowledge” to a man and that man wrote it in a textbook, would that wisdom in the textbook now become the “wisdom of man”? Not at all. It is still God’s wisdom.

Ask any evangelical...What is the Bible’s advice on securing wisdom? The typical answer given is to simply pray for it and then quote the apostle James. “If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him” (James 1:5 -KJV). But there is another valid biblical answer. Solomon said “He that walketh with wise men shall be wise” (Proverbs 13:20a KJV). Today we walk with wise men when we read their books or take lessons from them. But wait, isn’t this wisdom of men? Well, it depends.

In Daniel 1:17-20 we see that God gave Daniel and his three friends “knowledge and understanding of all kinds of literature and learning” that a heathen king would ask for. Would God give “wisdom of men” to Daniel and his three friends or would God give godly wisdom?

Solomon also told of God’s use of scientific wisdom. “The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens” (Solomon - Proverbs 3:19 KJV). The correct understanding of our universe is accurate scientific knowledge. Unfortunately, mankind’s knowledge is not perfect. Did God use the “wisdom of men” to create the universe? Obviously not.

*Science is the process of thinking God’s thoughts after Him.* Johannes Kepler

1571- 1630 Mathematician and Astronomer

Solomon’s father, King David, also noted the testimony of God in nature: 1"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament showeth his handiwork. 2Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night showeth knowledge (Psalm 19:1-2 KJV)."

What is this knowledge the heavens are shouting out? If the heavens declare the glory of God, why are evangelicals so silent about it? If the heavens declare the knowledge of
God and if such knowledge is written in a textbook, does it immediately become the “wisdom of men”? If accurate scientific knowledge of the heavens is the wisdom of men, how is it even possible to glorify God with such “wisdom of men?” Another way to phrase this question: In the witness from God’s creation in scientific terms, where does the wisdom of God end and that of man’s begin? How spiritual was God to use scientific wisdom in the design and manufacturing of natural objects in our physical universe anyway as Solomon mentioned in Proverbs 3:19? Obviously, evangelicals need to rethink their understanding of spiritual wisdom and the wisdom of men. The “wisdom of men” is not accurate knowledge of our physical universe. Men that are in rebellion against God are prone to be in error of all classes of knowledge—spiritual and physical. It should be no surprise then why the testimony of God’s creative power is censored in our government schools and now sadly in our congregations. The wisdom of men, even religious men, can also reveal a separation from Godly wisdom.

Faraday’s law, Gauss’s law, Lenz’s law, and Newton’s laws of motion are so named not because these men invented these laws, but because they discovered God’s wisdom so expressed as natural laws. Such laws or wisdom is what God used to establish the heavens (Proverbs 3:19). So God used valid engineering principles in designing our universe. Fred Heeren admitted that “most people today are unaware that the majority of pioneers of science were outspoken Christians.” Heeren admits that “The scientific revolution was not ushered in during a movement toward atheism, but during a reformation of faith.”

J. Robert Oppenheimer, known as the father of the atomic bomb, was a theoretical physicist and professor of physics at the University of California, Berkeley. In an article titled “On Science and Culture” in Encounter, October 1962, Oppenheimer, a non-Christian, admitted that modern science was born out of the Christian worldview. As a non-Christian, such testimony from secular men is clearly not natural, but it testifies to the power of the Christian witness from an earlier scientific generation on Oppenheimer.

Alfred North Whitehead, a mathematician and co-author of Principia Mathematica with Bertrand Russell, agreed with Oppenheimer. In the Harvard University Lowell Lectures entitled "Science and the Modern World" (1925 - page 132) Whitehead said that Christianity is the mother of modern science because of “the medieval insistence in the rationality of God.”

Another possible question to consider is: Why would any believer use the wisdom of men separated from God in evangelism? J.P. Moreland gives us insight into what these earlier believers were probably doing. Greek rhetoricians did not base their persuasion on rational considerations alone, but on their speaking ability to arouse emotions and thus bypass issues of substance. They were paid to persuade the crowd to a particular view. Paul’s example in ministry, as we saw, was an argument against ministers that fail to address unbelieving minds. Moreland adds, “And today’s deadly philosophies are not the result of human intelligence and thinking, but rather, thinking that is unyoked from the true knowledge that comes from above, from God.” It’s possible that Paul was speaking against believers that attempted to evangelize based upon mistaken philosophies.
of this world to arouse an emotional response and not upon accurate knowledge of either God’s Word or God’s universe.

**We Are Only Called to Preach Christ**

The next time a Christian or minister replies that they are only called to preach the gospel of Jesus Christ, ask them why do they then talk about church potlucks, socials, picnics, concerts, plays, sporting events and players, cultural or newsworthy events? It sounds so spiritual, but it’s not likely that even they practice what they are professing. But if they did, would they really be spiritual?

Even though Paul was called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ which implies preaching the gospel (Acts 9:15, Romans 1:1, 1 Corinthians 1:1, 2 Corinthians 1:1, Galatians 1:1, Ephesians 1:1, Colossians 1:1, 1 Timothy 1:1, 2 Timothy 1:1, 11). Paul did not always start with the gospel but with the culture he encountered. The Holy Spirit inspired Paul to use logic that caused some Mars Hill philosophers to begin doubting their system of idolatry. Once they began doubting their idolatrous worldview, their worldview could then be open to the gospel-view. On many other occasions Paul did not start with, nor only preach the gospel of Jesus Christ: Acts 13:16-22, 34-41, 14:15-18, 15:1-2, 16:17-18, 22:23-29, 23:6-8, 24:10-21, 25:8-11, 26:1-11, 28:17-20. Clearly Paul did not just preach the gospel. Evangelical ministers need this concept deeply embedded in their thinking to help them formulate a successful strategy in winning our very skeptical secular society to Christ. We have asked “What would Jesus do?” (Some examples of Jesus’ apologetics are found in: Luke 7:22, 24:25-32, John 5:36, 10:37, 38.) We should also ask, “What would the most successful missionary, the apostle Paul, do?”

The atheist Richard Dawkins articulated the naturalistic mind-numbing inhibition when he wrote: “Biology is the study of complicated things that give the appearance of having been designed for a purpose.”

If we are only called to preach Christ, we will never show the Richard Dawkins of our world the evidence of God’s creative intervention in nature. If Ben Stein’s interview with Richard Dawkins as seen in Expelled - No Intelligence Allowed is encouraging, it’s because this atheist is closer to admitting the validity of intelligent design than is popularly believed. (See the YouTube Expelled links under resources at the end of Chapter 3.)

Dawkins sees all complicated biological mechanisms as apparent designs. If there is no real design, then there is no Designer. Dawkins is not alone in this view. This is the view that millions of American students are indoctrinated with. And this philosophy is the raw seed for secularism in our culture. This way of viewing could be overturned if only evangelicals would wake up and help publish the evidence of God, the censored evolutionary problems, the naturalistic blind faith that is required, and seek to be just as involved in the politics of schools as the atheists. The collective failure of evangelicals is a failure to discern the spiritual nature of this mental blindness/captivity and then respond to it intelligently via Holy Spirit-lead apologetics and public policies.
Some evangelicals rightly take time to engage cultists who knock on their front door with twisted interpretations of Holy Scriptures (special revelation). Shouldn’t we also take time to untwist erroneous interpretations of God’s General Revelation (creation) in the materialist’s mind as well? To do this well requires personal preparation in both God’s Word and God’s Works. (Another effective and easy method is to share the recommended resource DVDs in Chapter 2.)

Evangelicals understand that the hungry must be fed before evangelism can be effective in poor countries. Why then are we so slow to understand the skeptic’s hunger for intellectual reasons with evidence before they too will listen to the gospel? This is the shocking surprise for evangelicals: Some skeptics will never see Christ if we only preach Christ. This is true for both physical and intellectually hungry people.

**Inside Confusing Voices**

Dr. Tim Kimmel, Author of *Why Christian Kids Rebel* and *Grace-Based Parenting* says that, “People challenge me on this [of putting his own children in public schools] because of the many things our kids were either taught or exposed to that ran contrary to our faith. Take the theory of evolution, for example. They say, ‘How could your kids handle the consistent barrage of evolutionary teaching?’ Actually, it was quite easy. We’ve found that when you’re trusting in the power of the Holy Spirit to instruct and convict a heart about the things that are true, it doesn’t actually require twelve years of indoctrination for someone to become convinced that evolution isn’t how they got here. Between what they learned in church, Sunday school, and a few lively dinner discussions with us, we took care of that threat.”

Unfortunately and despite Dr. Kimmel’s advice, if the Church had been responsible and taken a more serious approach to apologetic training, it’s very likely the home-schoolers would not have retreated in such large numbers from the government schools. Dr. Kimmel should share his dinner answers with all the parents in his church. Many of them are struggling to provide answers for their children.

Unfortunately it isn’t as easy as Dr. Kimmel has projected, even with the power and presence of the Holy Spirit, for a variety of reasons. This leaning on the Holy Spirit sounds so humble and spiritual. Yet the Holy Spirit is leaning on us to study and to have answers. Historically, it’s been the failure of evangelical leadership to supply these answers to the questions that are being asked. Unfortunately, our leadership is still failing to challenge us and then train us to have real answers with evidence for our faith.

“Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” Apostle Paul - 2 Timothy 2:15 (KJV)

…Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect (Peter-1 Peter 3:15 NIV).
It’s never “Holy Spirit alone plus nothing,” but “Holy Spirit plus a faithful effective witness who has studied and done the homework” as the previous and following verses testify:

“How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?” Apostle Paul - Romans 10:14 (KJV).

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen. (Jesus the Christ - Matthew 28:19-20 KJV).

Evangelicals need to understand that the Dr. Kimmels that pastor our churches are stuck with the notion that doing ministry means building church attendance and this involves encouraging the congregation to mix with the world through relationship building. In this context, it means encouraging children to attend public schools. This model worked during the fifties. Unfortunately, our government schools are much more hostile toward Christian students and their beliefs than ever before.

This battle for the hearts and minds of our youths is a spiritual battle in a guerrilla warfare format. Not all battles are equally intense. If I were Satan, I would ensure that the Christian leader’s children were least attacked, so the parents these leaders influence will be at ease to put their children in my schools with little to no concern.

John McDowell reported from the Nehemiah Institute in The Last Christian Generation – The Crisis Is Real. The Responsibility Is Ours. (See www.NehemiahInstitute.com) Eighty-five percent of youth from Christian homes that attend public schools do not embrace a biblical Theism Worldview. McDowell adds: “It is clear we have all but lost our young people to a godless culture.”

Apparently while Dr. Kimmel tries to build his church by encouraging Christians to maintain a relationship with the government schools, most Christians will lose their children to worldliness and humanism in our government schools.

J. P. Moreland adds: “That is why our discipleship materials often leave Christian young people vulnerable to atheistic college professors with an ax to grind. For such professors, shredding an intellectually unprepared undergraduate’s faith is like shooting fish in a barrel.” The latest evidence shows this is also occurring in middle and high schools.

Not all families have conversations around the dinner table. But for those that do it can be a daunting challenge for parents to respond to the faith questions of their children. This is because evangelicals are typically never challenged in our fellowships to better themselves in apologetic training.
Some children are resilient while others are more susceptible to peer pressures and tend to soak up the values and ideas around them. The resilient ones are much more likely to question, challenge, and survive in public school while the others need to be shielded. Some children don’t tell their parents all their challenges either. Even though my father was a minister and knew God’s Word, my father had no scientific training. I knew he had no scientific answers, thus I never told him about my struggles. I accepted Christ as my savior in the second grade, but began to have doubts of God’s existence in the sixth grade. It was a silent struggle. It did not take twelve years to begin my conversion toward atheism. Only a few encounters started the process. My parents never knew that I had such a struggle or why it existed. The formula toward atheism simply involves an active school and an inactive church.

Even though a parent may not be able to respond to all the scientific challenges, a Christian parent should always be able to give evidence of God’s existence via fulfilled biblical prophecy. First, Christian parents should learn their Bibles well, especially prophecies concerning the Messiah and how Jesus fulfilled them. Isaiah 53 is a classic passage. This passage foretells the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ 700 years before. Learn it well and go over it with your children. Second, parents need to actively seek out faith conflicts and struggles with their children. It’s not a question of “if,” but “when” their child will doubt, especially if there has been no apologetic training. Ask any parent that has lost a child to atheism, agnosticism or simple rebellion toward worldliness one question: Would they read a scientific apologetic book to help hold their child in the Christian faith if that’s what it took? Outstanding professional scientific apologetic DVDs are available from www.trueU.org and www.discovery.org. Be sure to check out the resources at the end of this chapter and Chapter 2. (There is another reason for youth rebellion, and unfortunately it involves carnality, compromise, and mistaken theologies among us that yield a view of God as always accepting of us no matter how we live. See Matthew 7:21-23.)

While David Livingstone, the famous Christian missionary doctor, was a teenager, he refused to read the Christian books his father gave him. He preferred works on science and travel. “The book that finally brought about his conversion was one that tried to fit together faith and science.”25 Imagine, if more church services included scientific apologetics, what a spiritual impact it could have. In David Livingstone’s life it meant influencing the continent of Africa for Christ. A major evangelical problem today is evangelical indifference and inability in perceiving the spirituality of scientific apologetics. How many other David Livingstones have we failed to influence because of our non-political involvement for alternative schools of choice or our non-scientific engagement with apologetics? Evangelicals have yet to match the political activity and intellectual energy of the godless humanists.

The choice between the pain of losing a child or the pain of self discipline is a no-brainer for parents who love their children. Jonathan Wells’ Icons of Evolution and the Discovery Institute’s Explore Evolution are very layperson level readable books. (See resources at the end of Chapter 2.)
This point is belabored here because of our tendency to minimize the influence of a mature, trained Christian mind to engage successfully in spiritual conflict. John R.W. Stott illustrates this error with his comment:

Certainly we are all influenced for good or ill by our education and environment, and by the political and economic system under which we live. Certainly too we should seek justice, freedom and well-being for all men. Then Stott minimizes all this external influence with the concept that the basic problem is with man himself and states: Yet it was not a lack of these that Jesus attributed the evils of human society, but to man’s very nature, what he called our ‘heart’. Here are His exact words:

For from within, out of the heart of man, come evil thoughts, fornication, theft, murder, adultery, coveting, wickedness, deceit, licentiousness, envy, slander, pride, foolishness. All these come from within, and they defile a man (Mark 7:21-23) 26

Stott completely confuses the issue here. The central issue is not just the basic problem of man and his natural sinful tendency, but the ability and freedom of Satan to take people captive and hold them prisoners by their minds in the first place (John 8:44, 2 Timothy 2:24-26). This is both an internal (natural sinful tendency) and external (being taken prisoner by the mind) spiritual battle. Jesus stressed the external component when He warned His disciples to be aware of the doctrine of the Pharisees (Matthew 16:6) and likewise Paul when he warned of vain philosophies of men (Colossians 2:8). There are very real external forces Satan uses effectively because “Christians” have failed to resist them.

To the degree we emphasize that man is a basic sinner only will also be the degree that we completely de-emphasize the external battle of setting prisoners free. In this we ignore Satan’s efforts of capturing minds with his lies. The spiritual battle we find ourselves in is very much an internal and external conflict. The more we emphasize the internal, the less we will feel responsible for the external. We dare not emphasize one over the other, especially while so many children are being converted to atheism and agnosticism in our government schools. Because all citizens have the power to influence public policy, God will hold us responsible for what we did and did not do politically. Of course, evangelicals do not want to hear how responsibility they are to have real answers with evidence. Evangelicals prefer to have their conscience appeased, their ears tickled with stories of God’s love, and how wonderful they are when they give gifts of food and other forms of aid to their communities.

Apologetics Misunderstood

Evangelicals rejecting apologetics can even articulate their reasons in pseudo-spiritual or
mistaken biblical analogies such as: “Why should one put on Saul’s armor?” For such a powerful tool of the Spirit apologetics is, it is no wonder why Satan has twisted the minds of so many believers concerning apologetics.

Reasons for rejecting apologetics vary anywhere from a false associate to angry debating to believing that special intellect or special Holy Spirit calling is required. With all the examples in the Holy Scriptures, a person grieves the Holy Spirit if they believe they must have a personal passion for apologetics first. Neither is apologetics expressing biblical truths in subtle contemporary language to somehow make the gospel acceptable to a culture that is in rebellion against God. This is the seeker-sensitive churches’ sin.

Another Prophet

On September 20, 1912, at the 101st opening session of Princeton Theological Seminary, J. Gresham Machen warned the faculty and students, “False ideas are the greatest obstacles to the reception of the gospel.”

Do we really love the Lord with all our minds enough to discipline ourselves to study? While all may not be called to be research scholars, all are called to personal study and devotion (2 Timothy 2:15). All are called to have answers.

“The heart of the righteous studieth to answer.”
Proverbs 15:28a (KJV)

“But in your hearts set apart Christ as Lord. Always be prepared to give an answer to everyone who asks you to give the reason for the hope that you have. But do this with gentleness and respect” 1 Peter 3:15 (NIV).

Jesus replied: “Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the first and greatest commandment.”
Jesus the Christ - Matthew 22:37-38 (NIV)

---

This question is based on the story when Saul dressed David in a coat of armor to fight the giant, Goliath. It’s believed that David refused because he was not comfortable fighting with Saul’s armor. It was awkward. The real reason David rejected Saul’s armor was because David had not “proved it” (KJV) or tested it or trained in it. 1 Samuel 17:38-40.

This question on first glance can give an evangelical a false sense of “spiritual/biblical” justification for refusing to prepare intellectually for spiritual warfare via apologetics simply because apologetics does not fit their personal evangelistic style.

Training for combat is never a pleasant exercise. The best training involves rigorous discipline. To reject the wisdom and experience of seasoned fighters, especially the examples in Holy Scripture, is to reject the wisdom of God. No soldier dare trust only in his favored style of fighting. Few enemies give any option to successfully engage them on single terms of engagement or personal preference of combat. On the spiritual level, David was God’s man, not Saul. So on this basis, David was to follow God’s instructions, not Saul’s.
Evangelicals who have failed to love the Lord their God with all their minds are disobedient to God’s first and greatest commandment. Evangelicals that have failed to seek out and offer biblical, logical, and scientific answers have become prisoners of Satan in their minds too. Humanists are not Satan’s only prisoners. Evangelicals have become prisoners of truncated spirituality and “sanctified” inhibiting mindsets. We have been led astray from our sincere and pure devotion to the very personification of logic – Jesus the Christ. The apostle John called Jesus the Logos, the Word or the Concept. The apostle Paul’s warning to the Corinthian Christians applies very much to evangelicals today.

“But I am afraid that just as Eve was deceived by the serpent’s cunning, your minds may somehow be led astray from your sincere and pure devotion to Christ.”

Apostle Paul - 2 Corinthians 11:3 (NIV)

The poor Christian witnessing at Columbine High School is typical of Christian witnessing at most other campuses. Considering the popular and erroneous evangelical mindset toward apologetics, the challenges of Master-degreed godless instructors that influence our youth and their classmates, our young people are not prepared to be the “salt and light” in the public schools that many evangelical parents and ministers mistakenly believe they are. This failure of our youth is very much indicative of the failures of parents and ministers toward preparing their young people for these challenges. We must do a better job in preparing our congregations for the conflict in the public square. Simply pushing them to be in the public square or to build relationships only is no longer acceptable with our ever increasing skeptical secular godless culture. Focus on the Family’s Truth Project and TrueU are great resources to begin this training. Go to www.TrueU.org.

Considering all the sermons that have been preached and Sunday school lessons taught, it is absolutely pathetic that we have failed to train our people to contend for the faith. (Philippians 1:7, Jude 1:3). What a waste of time! God will judge us on this! Yet with this grievous sin, we still send the majority of our children into godless humanistic government schools so they can be “witnesses.” Satan must be laughing. Many Christian schools are not much better. All private/independent Christian schools should require a serious study in apologetics that is age appropriate. The primary reason should be to develop apologetic warriors for effective evangelism. A secondary reason is to prepare for a spiritual defense.

"Tell ye your children of it, and let your children tell their children, and their children another generation." Joel 1:3 (KJV)

The evangelist and apologist, J.P. Moreland offered an insightful reference: "Two hundred years ago, the great spiritual master and Christian activist William Wilberforce (1759-1833) wrote a book about the nature of real Christianity and authentic spiritual growth. In a modern book about the spiritual life, especially the cultivation of spirituality in children, I doubt that the first issue addressed would be apologetics! But this is precisely what was at the forefront of Wilberforce’s mind. His statement is so powerful, I will cite it in full:’
In an age in which infidelity [atheism] abounds, do we observe them [parents] carefully instructing their children in the principles of faith which they profess? Or do they furnish their children with argument for the defense of that faith? They would blush on their child's birth to think him inadequate in any branch of knowledge or any skill pertaining to his station in life. He cultivates these skills with becoming diligence. But he is left to collect his religion as he may. The study of Christianity has formed no part of his education. His attachment to it--where any attachment to it exists at all--is too often not the preference of sober reason and conviction. Instead his attachment to Christianity is merely the result of early and groundless possession. He was born in a Christian country, so of course he is a Christian. His father was a member of the Church of England, so that is why he is, too. When religion is handed down among us by hereditary succession, it is not surprising to find youth of sense and spirit beginning to question the truth of the system in which they were brought up. And it is not surprising to see them abandon a position which they are unable to defend. Knowing Christianity chiefly by its difficulties and the impossibilities falsely imputed to it, they fall perhaps into the company of unbelievers.

In Conclusion:

It’s been said that Christians are the only army that buries its wounded. This is intended to criticize evangelicals for their inability to rehabilitate and heal the spiritually and mentally hurting among us. The extent to which this is true is debated. However, without a doubt, we are the only army that sends its soldiers (children/students) into spiritual combat without training and equipment that is readily available. Students have died physically and spiritually already because they were not trained in apologetics. Satan must be laughing. When will we learn?!

Dr. Randy Douglass, Adjunct Professor of Religion at Charleston Southern University and Bible teacher at Palmetto Christian Academy in Mount Pleasant, SC wrote: I use to think the war zone for the Christian young person began on the secular college campus; the hard facts now tell us that the war zone begins in the middle school and high school:… Churches need to evaluate the teachers who are teaching Sunday school and ensure they know how to answer the skeptical questions about their topic. Students are not being taught how do defend their faith, and how to answer skeptical questions. Many teachers have not been trained in apologetics themselves. It is possible that some teachers may even harbor some doubts themselves. Every church should provide apologetic training for their teachers from at least middle school and up. Our teachers must not teach Bible stories as moral ‘tales’ but as historic facts…and then be able to give the evidence to back it up.

Sunday school curriculum from middle school through adults needs to include a steady diet of apologetics. Our entire culture (including secular schools) is aggressively teaching the apologetics of evolution and secular humanism. They indoctrinate our students in the humanistic worldview, and they model that worldview. At the same time, our churches and Sunday schools are teaching Bible stories that may seem nothing more than fairy tales to these young people. They are not connecting the Bible to the real
world. Our young people are not being taught how to defend their faith—and we wonder why we are losing them.29

Why evangelicals are guilty:

If Christians had taken William Wilberforce’s advice much more seriously to furnish their children with argument for the defense of [their Christian] faith, England would be a different nation today. American Christians have failed to follow the same advice and consequently are reaping the same sad fruit.

Just as Satan tempted Christ with scripture toward disobedience (Luke 4:9-12, Matthew 4:5-7), so Satan has tempted and convinced many evangelicals that it is more spiritual to trust in the Holy Spirit alone to do all the convincing. Here evangelicals have been taken captive with pseudo-spirituality in their minds. What an effective strategy from hell to render evangelicals ineffective for our time! One verse Satan encourages Christians to misapply is based on Paul’s Corinthian passage: “[M]y preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in the demonstration of the Spirit and of power: That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.” (1 Corinthians 2:4-5 KJV) Please note carefully that Satan used the same principle of universality misapplied when he tempted Christ. That verse was Psalm 91:11-12.

11 For he will command his angels concerning you to guard you in all your ways; 12 they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.

Psalm 91:11-12 (NIV)

“Oh, what a wonderful verse to believe to be true for all times and conditions! So why not just trust God and jump. You simply need to let God’s angels catch you.” There is a problem here. This verse cannot be universally applied to all situations. This same mistake of universality misapplied is repeated when evangelicals associate universality to 1 Corinthians 2:4-5. An honest evaluation shows it doesn’t fit all situations. It doesn’t even apply to every situation Paul encountered. On the contrary of popular evangelical claims, Paul, who wrote to the Corinthians, used a multiple evangelistic approach to reach different groups who had different sets of questions. Paul’s approach included apologetics. The Jews looked for a Messiah. The Greeks looked for wisdom. Paul even advised the Corinthians, who had been convinced by the power of the Holy Spirit (1 Corinthians 2:4-5), to argue persuasively (2 Corinthians 10:5).

It is no surprise then that Paul's approach in evangelism was so varied. This is our first clue to suspect that 1 Corinthians 2:4-5 cannot be universally applied to all evangelistic approaches. Because of Paul’s variability in ministry we can conclude that 1 Corinthians 2:4-5 has limited application. Can we say that we have been just as flexible to meet our culture’s cry for evidence and search for wisdom? Friendship evangelism is forever limited if it fails to provide solid answers with evidence. Are we training Christians to provide answers to the questions that will be asked once a friendship relationship has been established? An honest evaluation shows our failures. Consequently, we have also failed to train our children to be apologetic warriors and to be ready with an intelligent
defense of reasons for the faith (Philippians 1:7, 17, 1 Peter 3:15). We have also failed to oppose the political forces that cause atheistic naturalism to be our national educational policy and state endorsed religion.

**What Should Bill and Irene do?**

Bill and Irene must be warned that most evangelical youth are leaving the Christian faith because we are failing to give the evidence for the faith. At some point in time Bill and Irene will need to help their child build a robust Christian faith as a defense against the skeptical attacks that will come. It’s only a matter of time. There is a very real probability (75 percent) that Bill and Irene will lose their child to the humanists unless they begin doing something about it now.

Bill and Irene should:

a) Put their personal theologies to the test and see if such theologies come closer to God’s Word or the popular evangelical culture. Resources at the end of this chapter and Chapter 2 will help in this test.

b) Encourage apologetic training in their home, church, and Christian school.

c) Help sponsor a youth to an apologetic summer retreat. See Chapter 2 for resources.

d) Give to an apologetic organization. See Chapter 2 resources.

e) Start a neighborhood science club. Ask and seek God’s wisdom on how to engage others in this evangelical outreach. Discovery Institute has very good DVDs. Look again at the end of Chapter 2 for resources and websites. Free youth bulletins are available from Creation Moments. www.creationmoments.com

f) Copy and share this chapter with a Sunday school class.

**Suggested Scripture Reading:**

*Wisdom and the personification of wisdom in Jesus’ apologetics:*

- Proverbs 2; John 3:1-2, 8:52-59, 10:24-39

**Resource:**

**Audio CD/Podcast:**

1) “One Pitch from Humility” featured Frank Pastore’s testimony. This is a Focus on the Family radio program that was aired on 05/12/10. Frank admitted that he was a product of California’s public education and an atheist. He was also a professional baseball player and his teammates shared Christ with him for five years, but had no answers for his questions. Later he was given three apologetic books that led to his conversion. After he became a Christian, he told his fellow teammates... “Guys, I asked you legitimate questions... When I asked this... you should have said this.... You guys are in violation of 1 Peter 3:15 and my blood was on your hands.”

The apostle Paul would concur with Pastore, “Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men. For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.” Apostle Paul – Acts 20:26-27 (KJV)
Lesson learned: Evangelicals mistakenly interpret the atheistic challenge as a heart or lifestyle problem that the Holy Spirit has yet to convict, when instead we need to be obedient to the Holy Spirit and ready to give answers to the questions atheists ask.

**Article: “Closing the Back Door: The Need for Christian Education”**
by Randy Douglass.
This article looks at the reasons many Christian youth abandon the faith and identifies the primary problem as a failure to pass on “a robust Christian faith” during middle and high school. Its primary message is that aggressive apologetic programs could reverse this troubling trend.
Source: http://www.normangeisler.net/need-for-christian-education.html

**Article: “An Apologetic for Apologetics”** by Norman L. Geisler
Source: http://www.normangeisler.net/apologetic.html

**Books:**
1) *LOVE YOUR GOD WITH ALL YOUR MIND*, J. P. Moreland
   - The Role of Reason in the Life of the Soul
   NAVPRESS, PO BOX 35001, Colorado Springs, Colorado 80935

2) *FULL GOSPEL, FRACTURED MINDS?*, Rick M. Nanez
   - A Call to Use God’s Gift of the Intellect
   Zondervan, Grand Rapids, Michigan 49530  (www.zondervan.com)

3) *The Apologetics of Jesus: A Caring Approach to Dealing with Doubters*,
   Patrick Zukeran and Norman Geisler

4) *The Scandal of the Evangelical Mind*, Mark A. Noll
   William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, Grand Rapids, Michigan

5) *Fit Bodies FAT MINDS – Why Evangelicals Don’t Think and What To Do About It*,

6) *The Closing of the American Mind*, Allan Bloom
   Published by Simon & Schuster Inc., New York, London, Toronto, Sydney, Tokyo

7) *Lord or Legend? Wrestling with the Jesus Dilemma*, Gregory A. Boyd &

**Apologetic-favoring seminary:**
Veritas Evangelical Seminary, 39407 Murrieta Hot Springs Road, Murrieta, CA  92563
Phone: 951-689-6389,  Website: www.veritasSeminary.com
Norman Geisler’s resources include:
- Geisler Complete Debate Library on MP3 – 25 debates
- Dr. Norman Geisler POINTS That Show Christianity Is True
- Seminary in a Box. The Life Work of Dr. Norman Geisler – 50 Top Lectures With PowerPoint Presentations.

See also *An Introduction to Christian Apologetics* by Joseph M. Holden.
Chapter 7: Misleading Sound Bite Theologies

There are three popular self-evident truths among evangelicals that are very misleading. One is “God’s in control,” the other, “We’re living in the last days,” and the third, “Jesus was not a social reformer.” Misinterpretations here yield more apathy among evangelicals to oppose the works of Satan (1 John 3:8) than is commonly realized. Let us review these ideas and carefully think biblically about them.

God’s in control!

When bad things happen, you can be sure an evangelical somewhere will say, “God’s in control.” The intention is to offer comfort by suggesting that God has a purpose in the suffering. The problem is that this idea is more false than true. God should never be blamed for mankind’s sins. God has the power to work good in all situations, but this does not imply that God purposed the original evil in the first place. All evil and sin is against God’s will.

In Jesus’ day, Siloam had a major accident (Luke 13:4-5). A tower fell and killed eighteen people. Was this an industrial accident with construction workers killed or were residents and homeowners killed? It doesn’t matter, but we will assume it was an industrial accident.

Everyone immediately thought these people must have been terrible sinners for “God to do this.” Jesus knew their thoughts and taught that everyone was guilty before God and under God’s judgment. Jesus asked them: “Do you think they were more guilty than all the others living in Jerusalem? I tell you, no! But unless you repent, you too will all perish” (Luke 13:4b-5 NIV). The tower did not fall because they were the worst sinners. Consequently, Jesus was also admitting that God didn’t cause the tower to fall. Being the most grievous sinners could be a reason why God permitted a tower to fall, but that wasn’t the reason this time. Then why did the Siloam tower fall? Both innocent and guilty suffer because of sinful consequences. However, there is another reason for suffering:

“My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge” Hosea 4:6a (KJV)

“A prudent man sees danger and takes refuge, but the simple keep going and suffer for it.” Proverb 22:3 (NIV)

Today we can speculate that the tower fell because of a poor foundation or a failure in the construction materials. Maybe some lead person was trying to rush the construction job and shortcut a safety procedure. Maybe some foundational bricks were not fully dried and, therefore, not ready to hold a load. Again, the accident occurred because of their lack of civil engineering knowledge or the lack of knowledge concerning God’s natural laws. People are hurt or destroyed for lack of knowledge, not just because of sin. This knowledge is not limited to only spiritual knowledge. It includes knowledge of physical
and social systems as well. God is the creator of it all. If we ignore God’s knowledge and wisdom concerning his creation, how can we ever expect to maintain, fix, survive, or be successful in God’s creation?

King Solomon wrote about God’s wisdom as it applied to physical laws: “The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens.”

Proverbs 3:19 (KJV)

Why should it ever be believed that accurate knowledge of God’s creation is secular knowledge? Why should it ever be believed that using this knowledge correctly is wisdom of men? In the typical Pauline sense “wisdom of men” refers to men separated from God’s wisdom. As we have seen in Chapter 2, the wisdom of men separated from God does not always correctly model the workings of our universe. Again, evangelicals need to be careful with their interpretation of “wisdom of men.”

This suggests that it is very possible for people to be lacking not only in God’s spiritual wisdom, but God’s natural wisdom too. There is always the potential for serious consequences when people are lacking in either forms of God’s knowledge.

The standard evangelical reply to calamity is to say that “God could have stopped this, but since God didn’t, God must have had some purpose in it.” Just because God is all powerful, does not imply that God intended all events to occur. God does not plan sinful actions. Sin is against God’s plan, but sin still happens.

In the beginning God put Adam in his garden to “work it and take care of it” (Genesis 2:15 NIV). This implies that God intended man to take care of his earthly creation. Man now has been given a measure of responsibility. If man is to do this safely and successfully, man needs at least some of the wisdom and knowledge of God as it applies to God’s creation. This also applies to the tower accident in Siloam that killed eighteen people.

There are many earthly issues that God has put man in charge of – some physical, some social, some political. God is the originator of the family, government, and society. If God intended man with free moral agency to tend His creation, how is God to respond if man willfully neglects God’s wisdom and God’s creation? If God always responds to inhibit the consequences of man’s choices or lack of choices as in too apathetic to vote or fight for righteous legislation, what would be the meaning of free moral agency or consequences? How could man ever be held responsible for anything? If man is never responsible, how could God judge him? What would be the meaning of sowing and reaping?

The prophet Jeremiah speaking for God said to God’s people to “seek the peace and prosperity of the city to which I have carried you into exile” (Jeremiah 29:7). Now if these Jews thought that God was in such control that God would do this anyway and are thus free to do nothing to make “prosperity happen,” God’s people would be in sinful disobedience and such a city were be influenced more by the godless.
If citizens elect to run a secular education system that strips God’s law off school walls and if citizens mistakenly believe children are in religiously neutral educational environments that mocks God and gives children every scientific reason to believe God doesn’t exist, how can such secular/carnal people not expect to reap the deadly benefits of such a godless education in their society? For those evangelicals that believe that God is in such control that everything as it now exists must surely be God’s plan are mistakenly deceived. Both the Old Testament prophet Hosea and the New Testament apostle Paul said that everyone will reap what they have sown.

“They sow the wind and reap the whirlwind.” Hosea 8:7a (NIV)

“Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.” Apostle Paul - Galatians 6:7 (KJV)

This principle is as true of nations and their public policies as it is for individuals and their lifestyle choices.

The “God’s in control” evangelical mantra is often heard during a political year. It’s meant to convey the idea that God alone chooses the leaders of nations and determines our public policies. This erroneous belief is the cause for more political apathy among evangelicals than is realized. It is based primarily on a misreading of two verses: one in Daniel and the other in Romans. Let’s review one at a time.

“He changes times and seasons; he sets up kings and deposes them. He gives wisdom to the wise and knowledge to the discerning” Daniel 2:21 (NIV).

God does give wisdom to the wise and knowledge to the discerning, but does God always do this? Not really. So this statement is not a universal statement, it’s a general statement. The mistaken evangelical interpretation is to believe Daniel’s passage is a universal statement that God always chooses each and every king and political leader. A universal statement is true for all times and conditions. A general statement is like a proverb that projects generalities, however, there are exceptions. If Daniel’s verse is universally true, then a biblical contradiction exists between him and the prophet Hosea. Hosea also speaking for God said that multiple kings were not chosen by God.

“They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I knew it not: of their silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off.” Hosea 8:4 (KJV)

It’s God’s will to govern in the affairs of men, but God generally uses willing vessels in the process. If an individual can rebel against God, so can a community or a nation of individuals. Wrong leaders can be elected to office that was not God’s will. This was God’s message through Hosea to the northern nation of Israel. They selected multiple kings that was not God’s choice.
King Solomon explained clearly the basis and legality for any legitimate government.

“Take away the wicked from before the king, and his throne shall be established in righteousness.” Proverbs 25:5 (KJV).

Our nation’s Founding Fathers understood this principle well. If a government is not operating on God’s laws, then that government lost its legal right and authority. The listing of grievances in the Declaration of Independence showed that our Founding Fathers understood this principle. It is lawful to rebel against a wicked king, because a wicked king has rebelled against God. Is this in conflict with Paul’s Roman thesis on government? Not at all. And a careful analysis will show why.

“Everyone must submit himself to the governing authorities, for there is no authority except that which God has established. The authorities that exist have been established by God.” Romans 13:1 (NIV)

Many German Protestant pastors were passive to Hitler’s laws that dehumanized the Jews because of Paul’s above passage to the Romans. Since their interpretations were mistaken, their applications were in serious error. (Later, some German pastors did protest against Hitler and were arrested as enemies of the state.) However Shirer reported, “Not many Germans lost much sleep over the arrests of a few thousand pastors and priests.”¹ Even today many evangelicals mistakenly think that all governments are established by God. Paul’s Romans 13:3 is not applicable to all governments and Paul explained why in the same passage.

“For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? Do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same.”  
Apostle Paul - Romans 13:3 (KJV)

This is in complete agreement with Solomon. Only governments operating on God’s laws have governing legitimacy – “the throne is established in righteousness.” (Proverbs 16:12 – NIV)

Our ministers have been fearful of congregational disunity and of losing tax-exemption status should they speak out on political issues. This silence has resulted in evangelical ignorance and this has yielded to apathy and accommodation toward wicked public policies. This cowardly reaction will reap the judgment of God.

“But the cowardly, the unbelieving, the vile, the murderers, the sexually immoral, those who practice magic arts, the idolaters and all liars—their place will be in the fiery lake of burning sulfur. This is the second death.” Jesus the Christ in Revelation 21:8 (NIV)

This fear is also in contrast to the apostles’ response: Peter knew that a government acting contrary to the laws of God is illegitimate and expressed his rebellion to such leaders as well.
“Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.” Acts 5:29 (KJV)

To question the phrase “God’s in control,” many think that God’s sovereignty is being questioned. Not at all. What is being questioned is God’s character. What is God really like? The sovereign God has decreed mankind a measure of control on planet Earth. This can be easily learned from both Old and New Testaments.

**God’s Character Revealed in the Old Testament**

Here we will look at three revealing examples. This first one involves the prophetess Huldah as it’s recorded in 2 Kings 22:14-20. Huldah spoke a word of the Lord to King Josiah. Note carefully, “I will gather thee unto thy fathers, and thou shalt be gathered into thy grave in peace” (verse 20 – KJV). Now review 2 Kings 23:28-30. It says that king Josiah didn’t die in peace. He died in battle. What went wrong? Was the Lord unfaithful in Huldah’s prophecy? Did God not know King Josiah’s true future?

Obviously, the Lord is never unfaithful or ignorant. Study 2 Chronicles 35:20-24 carefully. It appears that Josiah was acting in his own guidance which was against God’s plan. This is why Josiah was killed. Clearly, God’s will and purpose for King Josiah was that he would die in peace and have a peaceful reign. Josiah went against God’s plan and died a premature death.

Do not be overwicked, and do not be a fool—why die before your time?

Ecclesiastes 7:17 NIV

This applies to us today as well. Even though God has specific plans for our good, we can miss God’s plans by not being careful to pursue God’s ways. We can never say that even though God knows the end from the beginning, our lives are predetermined with no effects from our choices. We can cut short God’s good plans for us by disobedience.

The apostle Paul would agree: “…but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off” (Romans 11:22 KJV).

King Josiah lived as though he believed Huldah’s prophecy was without preconditions. In other words, he thought that his future was secure without meeting God’s preconditions. Evangelicals make the same mistake about God today. God doesn’t always need to specify His preconditions. There are sufficient scriptures to show that God punishes the rebellious, rewards the faithful, and permits mankind an active agent in effecting his environment. God does not need to continually repeat His requirements to the necessity of obedience and neither has God predetermined everything.

***

There is another classic example in the Old Testament. Mordecai’s famous reply to Queen Esther can help bring a measure of understanding of how God’s sovereignty and
Man’s freewill can coexist. This information is found in Mordecai’s response to Queen Esther.

*For if you remain silent at this time, relief and deliverance for the Jews will arise from another place, but you and your father’s family will perish. And who knows but that you have come to royal position for such a time as this?*   Esther 4:14 (NIV)

Note carefully Mordecai’s assurance that God will provide deliverance for the Jews with his comment: “relief and deliverance for the Jews will arise from another place.” How could Mordecai be so sure that God would provide deliverance even if Esther remained silent? Mordecai knew the prophets had promised a coming Messiah. This obviously could not happen if the Jews were annihilated. Mordecai also knew something else with confidence. If Esther remained silent, then she and her family would perish under God’s judgment. How did Mordecai know this? Again it’s based upon what God revealed about His character already through the prophets. Mordecai knew that passivity would be judged severely by God (Ezekiel 3:17-20, Amos 6:1-6, Obadiah 1:11). Evangelicals also need to take careful notice (Matthew 7:21, 25:30). God’s character has not changed. This warning also applies to us as we begin to witness what appears to be God removing His hand of protection and blessings on our nation.

This clearly shows that while God had established a plan of deliverance, God permits individual choices in that deliverance. If Esther did not get involved, God would raise up another deliverer, but his judgment would be on Esther and her family for their disobedience. Mordecai also knew that there were no guarantees of complete deliverance for Israel. If God’s people also failed to respond, then they would also suffer proportionally. Why should God’s judgment remain only on an apathetic Esther? God is no respecter of any person (Romans 2:11).

Amos revealed a God that was vehemently grieved by human right violations (Amos chapters 1 and 2). Obviously, such were against God’s plan on planet Earth. Thus, God is not in the “control mode” many evangelicals mistakenly believe Him to be in.

**God’s Character Revealed in the New Testament**

In the New Testament, Jesus is clearly the reflection of the Father and thus shows us what God is like.

“Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?” Jesus the Christ - John 14:9 (KJV)

When we look at the life of Christ, we see that He was very busy in destroying the works of the devil (1 John 3:8). Everywhere Jesus went, He fought against the works of Satan. Obviously this also reveals the nature of the Father as Jesus reflected it.
“For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.” John - 1 John 3:8b (KJV)

The works of the devil are to steal, kill, and destroy at all human levels of life experiences—private and public. In contrast to this, Jesus came to bring life. “The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly” (Jesus the Christ - John 10:10 KJV).

“And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.” Mark 7:37 (KJV)

From these few verses we learn that bad things are from Satan, not God. Therefore, bad things are not predestined by God. In fact God’s will on earth is not even a default because a great spiritual war is in progress on planet Earth. We are commanded to do spiritual battle by praying that God’s will be implemented on earth as it is in heaven (Matthew 6:10). Now why would Jesus teach His representatives on earth to pray in this manner if God’s will was a default? Could it be that by praying for God’s will, we open ourselves up to the leading of the Holy Spirit in implementing God’s will on earth and thus build the kingdom of Christ? While God plans for the Church is to be a redeeming element on the earth, the Church can fail in this plan. (See Revelation chapter 3.)

**In conclusion to God being in control:** Not everything that happens on planet Earth is predestined by God. We are in a spiritual warfare with the enemy of our souls.

Jesus interrupted the thieves’ agenda of stealing from others in the temple and spoke publicly many offensive comments. Today we have godless humanists robbing our youths’ minds and souls. When will Christ’s representatives on earth step in and oppose this? When will evangelicals oppose the works of the devil and the humanistic thieves in our temples of public education where the souls of children are being robbed?

The “God’s in control” sound bite theology is connected to the thought of a personal loving God that is interested in each of us as individuals. “Since God loves me, He probably will not let anything really bad happen to me.” Feel-good beliefs hang around for various mistaken reasons. This mistaken theology causes personal problems when bad things eventually do happen. It’s most likely the reason for Dr. James Dobson’s book *When God Doesn’t Make Sense*. The simple fact of the matter is that God loves each one of us personally anyway, even though God does not directly control us or many other sinful events affecting us. Sin is against God’s plan and hurts innocent people too. While we reap what we have sown, we also reap the sinful consequences of others too. God has the power to work good in evil situations, but this doesn’t mean that God intended the evil.

The person who thinks God doesn’t make sense is likely the same person with a skewed view of God (theology – God study). Contrary to evangelical beliefs, God is not in the control mode many perceive God to be in. Consequently, evangelicals are on the verge
of learning just how our evil schools can produce an evil government.\[A\] God has left the control of both to us, but we have vacated our God-given responsibilities, thinking that God was in control. In the meantime, the godless have taken social and political control. They have set the godless agenda in education without meaningful opposition from us.

While children are converted to atheism and agnosticism (inoculations against Christ and Christianity), evangelicals mistakenly believe conversions are the work of the Holy Spirit alone. “And since God’s in control, there is no need for Christians to study apologetics,” despite the fact secular, anti-God apologetics are published far and wide and are converting thousands of Christian youth to its worldview. This “God’s in control” mindset is just as inhibiting for Christian evangelicals as the naturalistic mindset is inhibiting to secularists. When both inhibitions are prevalent in a culture, evangelism is hindered, and an even more decadent society emerges. Evil public policies yield evil proponents to facilitate the decadence. Abortion, redefinition of marriage, confusion on God’s design for the family, and social decadence are the natural results. It should be no mystery why we have the social, political, and cultural problems we have.

The apostle John challenged the popular evangelical notion of “God being in control” when it comes to believing that whatever happened was intended by God. He wrote: “We know that we are children of God, and that the whole world is under the control of the evil one” 1 John 5:19 (NIV). From John’s teaching, we can conclude that while we are God’s children and that he loves us, God still allows things to happen to us that are completely outside God’s will for us. So who is in control? We are in a three-way struggle for control between God, Satan, and mankind.

But the minister said, “It is the will of God that God’s will always be done.” However, the minister needs to explain that God’s will is not always done. Jesus’ lesson on how to pray…”Thy kingdom come” (Matthew 6:10) is clear—God’s will is not a default on planet Earth. If God’s will is a default, why should we pray for it? We see this struggle between God and man in Jesus’ response over Jerusalem. “O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!” (Matthew 23:37 KJV) Clearly, God’s will was not done in Jerusalem.

People accept erroneous beliefs not only because of positive feelings of security, but also if they mistakenly think it releases them of responsibilities. “If God is in control, then God is responsible, not me.” Many evangelicals are thus completely at ease to simply let God do it all. “After all, if God’s in control, God really doesn’t need my meager efforts. God will get the job done.” When this general ethos enters the Church, the Church no longer is the representative of Christ on earth. In too many avenues of life the Church is no longer acting as the representative of Christ on the earth in opposing evil. Sadly, the Church is in this state now. It has failed in many ways to oppose the works of Satan (1

\[A\] See Dr. Erin W. Lutzer’s book: When a Nation Forgets God, Seven Lessons We Must Learn from Nazi Germany and Richard Weikart’s book: From Darwin to Hitler: Evolutionary Ethics, Eugenics, & Racism in Germany.
John 3:8). This explains Christian apathy in politics, public education policies, and apologetics.

When we trade our mandate to revolt against Satan for an attitude of resignation, we end up accepting things that come from Satan as coming from the hand of God! We trade in a perfect peace (that motivates us to fight) for a worldly peace (that leads to passivity). We tarnish the character of God by confusing his activity with Satan’s, and we undermine the mission of the church. We trade the legitimate challenge to overcome actual evil for the illegitimate challenge of accepting that God’s will is ultimately behind every evil event.\(^2\) Gregory Boyd in *Is God to Blame?*

***

A review of our history will show that Christians have had problems in other areas of ministry because of mistaken beliefs about God’s sovereignty. Most Christians today see foreign missionary activity as coming from the heart of God. It wasn’t always this way even with their knowledge of Jesus’ mandate:

“He said to them, “Go into all the world and preach the good news to all creation.”

Jesus the Christ - Mark 16:15 (NIV)

Jeff Fountain, the great-great-great grandson of John Fountain, reported that when William Carey, the father of modern missions, threw down copies of a magazine onto a table in front of his fellow Baptist ministers and said, “See what the Moravians have done! Can we not follow their example, and in obedience to our heavenly Master go out into the world and preach the Gospel to the heathen?” The senior pastor responded “Sit down, young man! If God wants to save the heathen, he will do it without your help or mine!”

What was the problem with these Christians that William Carey tried to correct? It was the mistaken belief that foreign missionary efforts were simply human attempts to interfere with God’s sovereignty.\(^3\) This same problem exist among evangelicals today for many social and political issues.

Since it’s falsely believe that God is in the micromanagement control mode on planet Earth, Christians mistakenly believe they need not be involved with apologetics, politics, education, or anything else because if God’s wants it done He will do it. “So sit down and shut up! God’s in control.” These Christians now mistakenly think of themselves as being free to pursue their own careers and vacation planning with all their personal energies and resources. If they truly trust that God’s in control, why do they put all their energies toward the realization of their own personal pleasures and profits? Surely, if God’s really in control, God will manage their careers and vacations too.

I once asked a Christian friend to help pray about something. He immediately responded, “Well, if it’s God’s will, it will happen. God’s in control.” He then turned his back to me and walked away. I knew immediately my friend was not going to pray for me at all.
He chose rather to “comfort” me with the popular, but mistaken, evangelical sound bite theology that “Everything that occurs is exactly how God intended it to occur. God’s in control.”

What happens on earth is the result of free moral agency of beings both physical and spiritual. A real spiritual war is underway for souls. There is real opposition to the will and plans of God on planet Earth. Christians are seriously mistaken that take comfort in a “Divine Blueprint Plan.” God is not the Big Cosmic Programmer in the sky. Neither does God micromanage responsibilities He has given to us. If issues and events on this planet seem chaotic, it’s because we are in a great spiritual war and too many evangelicals are not fighting for God. The outcome will be determined by the Holy Spirit AND our efforts much more than Christians realize.

If Jesus taught us to pray for God’s will to be implemented, then obviously God’s will is not a default on planet Earth:

"9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven."

Jesus the Christ - Matthew 6:9-10 (NIV)

God’s will is always implemented in heaven. It’s a different story on earth among sinful free moral agents including evangelicals. God is in control of his universe, but he doesn’t micromanage planet Earth. God will judge us instead because God gave us responsibility to make an impact for Him. Christians (little-Christs) are the primary means for God’s will to be implemented on earth. How can God be in control on Earth when so many evangelicals are out of His control?

We’re living in the last days!

Another very popular sound bite theology among evangelicals is “We’re living in the last days!” This comment like the “God’s in control” usually follows the proclamation of very bad news. This is meant to convey the idea that things are supposed to get bad in the last days. And since it is all part of God’s divine plan, there is nothing anyone can do about it or oppose it in anyway.

The problem with this inhibiting mindset is that it is an apologetic to discourage Christians from opposing the works of the devil just as Jesus did (1 John 3:8). This is another reason why so many Christians have retreated from the public square and other vital areas in life.

Luke also tells of a time when Jesus’ followers just knew that the kingdom of God was about to appear (Luke 19:11). When Jesus perceived this, He told them a story about a noble man that gave various servants ten minas. The noble man left them with instructions to “occupy until I come back” (Luke 19:13). When Jesus finished the story, the people learned that those servants that were obedient were rewarded. The one servant that was apathetic and did nothing was punished.
Down through the ages, Christians have often thought that their day was the beginning of the end of times. Jesus’ instruction is very clear. Every follower of Jesus is to “occupy” until He returns. This means we are to do what Jesus did. Since Jesus opposed the works of the devil, then we are to do likewise. Christians that become discouraged and believe that they cannot make a difference are deceived by Satan’s lie. They too will be punished for their apathy, lazy disobedience, and for believing Satan’s lie just as the lazy servant Luke wrote about. Evangelicals fail to discern that a harvest can still be reaped if they do not become discouraged. Christ doesn’t want us to simply hold on to the struggling end, but to be more than conquerors (Romans 8:37).

“And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved.” Luke, a companion to Paul - Acts 2:21 (KJV)

To be disobedient to our Lord’s command to “occupy until I return” (Luke 19:13) or to fail in following our Lord’s example in opposing the works of the devil (1 John 3:8) deserves God’s punishment.

**Jesus was not a social reformer!**

Because it is perceived that Jesus did not directly oppose the political powers of Rome, then it is believed that Christians should not oppose or be involved with the political powers today either. In fact Jesus did oppose a political leader connected to Roman authority.

31 At that time some Pharisees came to Jesus and said to him, “Leave this place and go somewhere else. Herod wants to kill you.” 32 He replied, “Go tell that fox, ‘I will drive out demons and heal people today and tomorrow, and on the third day I will reach my goal.’ ” Luke 13:31-32 (NIV)

Jesus’ example here models the perfect political activist: bold and courageous in sending a public message of protest to a political leader.

It’s good that evangelicals look to Jesus as an example to follow. The standard they look for in Jesus’ life concerning politics doesn’t match their standard for all other issues in life. Jesus didn’t play the trombone or get married either, yet many non-political Christians play trombones and get married. Jesus’ pre-public ministry included working in a carpenter’s shop for about twenty years. Maybe all ministers should do this too sometime after seminary. Why should what Jesus did or did not do just be applied to politics alone? In truth, this sound bite is simply convenient theology for the politically fearful and apathetic. It is also convenient but mistaken theology for those with truncated spirituality specializing in the nurturing ministries alone.

In a totalitarian regime like Rome was during Christ’s time on earth, collecting signed petitions and registering voters was both meaningless and fruitless. There was absolutely nothing in place, unlike today, to give meaning to any of this practice. Yet if we are
honest with the Scriptures, we will see multiple examples of political protest and involvement, even under oppressive regimes, for those that were sensitive to follow the Holy Spirit in both Old and New Testaments.

Many a prophet of God spoke God’s word of protest in the face of kings. Micaiah prophesied against King Ahab and was thrown into prison afterwards (2 Chronicles 18:12-27). Jehu spoke against King Jehoshaphat (2 Chronicles 19:1-3). Elijah sent a letter of protest to King Jehoram (2 Chronicles 21:12-15). Nathan rebuked King David (2 Samuel 12:1-12). And Jeremiah was put in prison for his public writings against King Jehoiakim (Jeremiah 36:23-28, 37:4, 13-21). Peter reminded us that these holy men spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit (2 Peter 1:21). We can conclude then that God intended that righteous judgment be established in governments and that protest and opposition be publicly and openly given. God sent his word in both oral and written formats to reprove, rebuke, and warn these kings. The prophets, acting in obedience to the Holy Spirit, were thus active in their governments in informing their generation and the kings they were subjected to. And it didn’t always go well for them.

The apostles taught the early Christians, operating under the oppressive Roman government, that the Old Testament prophets were examples of men of God that should be followed. The apostles’ examples matched their preaching, and they were thrown into jails as the result too. They were accused by the locals of offending the “peace of Rome” and for being a challenge to Caesar’s authority (Acts 17:7).

Note carefully how the apostle Peter emphasized that the prophets were directed by the Holy Spirit: “For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost” (2 Peter 1:21 KJV).

Paul’s instruction to Timothy was that all examples in Scripture, Old Testament included, were profitable instructions to follow: “All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness” (apostle Paul - 2 Timothy 3:16 KJV).

As a result the early Roman Christians died as martyrs and enemies of the state, simply because they refused to deny the supreme Lordship of Jesus Christ. Jesus was Lord even over Caesar (Acts 17:7). This was a form of political protest.

The gospel writer Luke recorded an interesting event in the early part of Jesus’ ministry. He said that Jesus went into a synagogue in Nazareth and read a portion from Isaiah’s chapter 61:

“18 The Spirit of the Lord is on me, because he has anointed me to preach good news to the poor. He has sent me to proclaim freedom for the prisoners and recovery of sight for the blind, to release the oppressed, 19 to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor. 20 Then he rolled up the scroll, gave it back to the attendant and sat down. The eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fastened on him, 21 and he began by saying to them, Today this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing.” Jesus the Christ - Luke 4:18-21 (NIV)
Jesus acknowledged that this same Spirit of the Lord that had been active upon the prophets was now also upon Him. Note carefully that the purpose was not restricted to just preaching the gospel (good news) but was meant to help bring freedom to prisoners and liberty to the oppressed. This is true spirituality. It’s not restricted to religious events.

Seeing how the Holy Spirit of God moved on the prophets, it is no surprise then to see Jesus protesting the corruption in the temple (Luke 19:45-46), the hardness of hearts in the synagogue (Mark 3:5), and the false teachings of the influential authorities over the minds of men and children (Matthew 16:6, 23:29-31). It follows then that the writer to the Hebrews (1:9) would describe Christ as “You have loved righteousness and hated wickedness.”

Back to Luke’s account of Jesus’ reading of Isaiah, Luke noted that “All spoke well of him and were amazed at the gracious words that came from his lips” (Luke 4:22). Now most preachers would stop on such positive accolades, especially when everything is going in their favor, but not Jesus. The Spirit of the Lord that had just inspired Jesus to read to them pressed Him to next challenge their theology. And this time when Jesus finished talking, the people wanted to kill him (Luke 4:23-30). Anticipated negative reaction, and the fear of it, is probably the main reason why so many ministers are silent. Yet they will be found wanting when the righteous Judge reviews their missed opportunities to train others in righteousness to oppose wickedness.

Jesus wasn’t the only one to offer a public protest. We see it also in the life of John the Baptist. Despite the consequences, John the Baptist sent a bold and public protest to Herod. John stated that it was not lawful for Herod to have his brother Philip’s wife. (Matthew 14:4). Later John was arrested, put in prison and then executed. Jesus at no time gave any warning to John to be silent or to use discretion when publicly speaking against political leaders. Instead, Jesus praised John and his ministry (Matthew 11:7-11). By praising John’s ministry, Jesus approved of John public rebuking a political leader – Herod.

Today one could lose tax-exemption status if they preached against a public candidate running for office. Since in Jesus and John’s day such public preaching could mean their death, it seems clear then that tax-exemption status would not have been a deterrent for Jesus or John the Baptist. In contrast today, many ministers fail to speak out on policy issues even though the tax-exemption status only applies to people making statements about candidates for public office. Many evangelical pastors are fearful of conflict in their congregations over public policy as well and this silences them again.

The apostle Paul also gave a clear example of protest against a Roman public policy. Even though the Roman government was infested and saturated with slavery, the apostle Paul spoke and wrote boldly against such practices. He described menstealers (KJV) or slave traders (NIV) as people engaging in practices that were against sound doctrine (1 Timothy 1:10). (Those who are confused with some Pauline passages, thinking that Paul endorsed slavery, forget to realize that indentured servitude was an option to secure a
loan and then pay it off.) Paul’s preaching earned him a prison cell on multiple occasions.

The principle that God will bless those that are persecuted for righteousness also applies (Matthew 5:10). Please note carefully that persecution applies to the self. It is no virtue to stand by and permit the persecution of others. It is definitely a crime that will be judged by God. “On the day you stood aloof while strangers carried off his wealth and foreigners entered his gates and cast lots for Jerusalem, you were like one of them” Obadiah 1:11 (NIV).

The Church of Jesus Christ, as representative of Christ on earth, is obviously tasked with the work of Christ. This means that we must destroy the works of the devil wherever they appear, in private or public, just as Christ did.

“For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil” Jesus the Christ - 1 John 3:8b

If Jesus is to be Lord of our life, then this means all of life – private and public--otherwise Jesus is not Lord at all. This is exactly what the early Christians did. From the pagan perspective, it seemed that the world was being turned upside down (Acts 17:6). From Christ’s perspective, Christians were turning their upside down world right side up.

Amazing some evangelicals believe that Jesus can be their savior, but not their Lord. These evangelicals are seriously in error.

“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.”

Jesus the Christ in Matthew 7:21 (KJV)

**In Conclusion:**

Did you notice that all three sound bites: “God’s in control!” “We’re living in the last days!” and “Jesus was not a social reformer!” have the same effect? They render Christians non-responsive and apathetic to the needs of our world. Since Satan used scripture to tempt Jesus, should we be surprised if Satan uses scripture to give Christians a false since of spirituality in their apathy toward God’s action plan? This is our sacred rebellion. While we think we are pleasing God we are in rebellion toward Him. Should we be surprised if Satan also confuses Christians in their thinking regarding Christian service and what can be accomplished?
What should Bill and Irene do?

The main reason evangelicals are ineffective is ignorance of God’s desire and how to effectively resist godlessness in our culture. So now we have a good reason to pray for God’s will to be done on earth as it is in heaven. When we become serious enough in our prayers, then we also open ourselves to the possibility of becoming passionate servants of Christ that are directed by the Holy Spirit in implementing God’s will on earth. Christ’s kingdom is not of this world, but as Christ’s representative, we are to be the channel of God’s kingdom on earth. This is what the Holy Spirit inspired prophets did. This is only possible to an obedient people that are open to personifying Christ’s hands and minds to our world. This is only possible when we are sensitive to the Holy Spirit. We have much to repent of.

“If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.” 2 Chronicles 7:14 (KJV)

Bill and Irene should carefully consider again every biblical sound bite, self-evident truth that suggests we can never have revival, we should not get involved, and we can only hold on and wait for Jesus as things get worse. The main question Bill and Irene should ask is… What is the final effect of any sound-bite theology? Does it motivate me to be an active obedient servant for Christ in storming the gates of hell or does it inhibit me? Does it leave me with any idea that inactivity is acceptable with God or we cannot be successful?

Bill and Irene should also do what the wise king Solomon advised: “He that walketh with wise men shall be wise ...” (Solomon - Proverbs 13:20a KJV).

The way to walk with wise men today and become wise is to read their books and to put everything to the test of Scriptures. Anyone that becomes this wise, also becomes a soul winner.

“… and he that winneth souls is wise.” Solomon – Proverbs 11:30b (KJV)

Resources:
Books:

You’ve heard it said: “The world is evil. Christians should be neutral. You cannot legislate morality. Christians should not be involved in political issues.” These are issues of doctrinal importance that Christians have been hearing and believing for years. They are also things many of us have misunderstood. And our misunderstanding has trapped us in sinful inactivity. Gary DeMar’s book is an excellent resource against true sounding, but sinfully false theological sound bites many evangelicals have accepted on cultic-like blind faith. Just as any deceived person will be judged by God, so will these evangelicals that have failed to search the scriptures to see whether such things are true. (Acts 17:11)
2) *Is God to Blame?*  Gregory Boyd
First published by: InterVarsity Press, Downers Grove, Illinois
then later by: Kingsway Publications, Lottbridge Drove, Eastbourne BN23 6NT, England. (Email: books@kingsway.co.uk)
Chapter 8: Easy Evangelicalism and Their Coming Judgment

Speaking before thousands from John’s Gospel, chapter fifteen, a Sunday morning mega-church pastor said, “I’m never going to stand up here and shame you into anything… I’m trying to take the pressure off you today so you will be more fruitful… Did you ever see in the Scriptures where Jesus tried to change our behavior by shaming us?”

Judging from applauds and laughs, this pastor’s sermon was well received. The formula for attracting evangelicals is really simple. Keep it nurturing, nice, fun, and very simple. Since many evangelicals are scripturally illiterate, they are prey to all sorts of religiously transmitted diseases. Forget being scripturally balanced, the message must simply be comforting and encouraging. It’s a bonus if any part is humorous. If the pastor said it, it must be from God.

Whatever happened to Paul’s advice to “Prove all things; hold fast that which is good” (1 Thessalonians 5:21 KJV), or the noble example of the Bereans who “searched the scriptures daily” in determining whether such things are true (Acts 17:11)? In fact, the first and greatest Christian missionary and church builder in Asia Minor and Europe was the apostle Paul. There were several congregations he had to shame. “I say this to shame you” (1 Corinthians 6:5 NIV). (See also 1 Corinthians 15:34.)

The mega-church message that Sunday was wonderful and easy listening, but was it true? Who would ever want it to be any different than what this pastor said? The pastor continued, “The pressure is not on the branch, but the vine. All the branch has to do is simply receive. Producing fruit is more about receiving than doing.” Again the audience applauded, but should we be surprised in a culture saturated with mediocrity and a mentality of entitlement?

Is it really true that “All God wants you to do is settle down and just receive”? Is it really all “about receiving and not doing”? Why do my ears feel like they’re being tickled (2 Timothy 4:3)? And did Jesus ever shame anyone?

Jesus shamed Peter. Jesus rebuked Peter as an instrument of Satan. Jesus’ rebuke immediately followed Jesus’ praise of Peter with the statement of building His Church on Peter’s good confession which was based on God’s revelation to Peter. Then after Peter’s rejection of Jesus’ words, “Jesus turned and said to Peter, ‘Get behind me, Satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men’ ” - Matthew 16:23 (NIV).

What a mysterious puzzle. Peter had received revelation from God about Jesus but was still thinking like a worldly man toward Jesus. An honest evaluation shows the Church has made similar mistakes toward social-spiritual issues that God has already clearly revealed His heart as well.
Jesus also publicly shamed His disciples after they failed to cast a demon out of a boy. The father of the boy said to Jesus, “I brought him to your disciples, but they could not heal him.” Then Jesus said to his disciples: “O unbelieving and perverse generation, how long shall I stay with you? How long shall I put up with you? Bring the boy here to me” - Matthew 17:16-17 (NIV).

Clearly, the disciples were disobedient in not fulfilling God’s plan on earth. Until Jesus arrived on this scene God’s will wasn’t being fulfilled. The boy was still demon possessed. Lesson learned: If God’s people fail, then God’s will is not implemented on earth as it is in heaven. We see this again when Jesus cried over Jerusalem. “O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!” Matthew 23:37 (KJV) Evangelicals who believe God is in such control that everything that happens is of His divine will are seriously mistaken. Jesus cried over Jerusalem because God’s will was not implemented. God’s will was not completely implemented in the past with the prophets nor in Jesus’ time.

Jesus publicly shamed the money changers in the temple by publicly calling them thieves: “It is written,” he said to them, “My house will be called a house of prayer, but you are making it a den of robbers.” Jesus the Christ - Matthew 21:12 (NIV)


Jesus shamed the two on their way to Emmaus by calling them fools: “Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken” Jesus the Christ - Luke 24:25 (KJV)

The pop-culture Jesus is nice and nurturing. The evangelical Jesus is no different. No one really wants a commanding, demanding Jesus. Jesus saw the same resistance. The human response was to crucified him. Those in the business of building “ministries” today understand this. If one is trying to attract people, then one must be cunningly judicious in the presentation of Jesus. The real Jesus is either minimized or censored all together. But why attract people with a phony Jesus? This is evangelical idolatry. It will lead people astray and consequently be severely judged by God.

Some of Jesus’ remarks have always been hard to receive: “Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven” Jesus the Christ - Matthew 7:21 (NIV).

This goes against those who preach that salvation is by God’s grace alone “plus nothing.”

[A] This is the one clear exception where God submitted to sinful actions of mankind to provide a sacrifice for the sins of all mankind. (Isaiah 53)
Jesus plainly said that doing God’s will was necessary to entering heaven. Christians rightly understand that salvation is a gift from God and not by one’s “good” works. It is by God’s grace (Ephesians 2:8, 9). No one can earn their way into heaven. However, obedience is a very necessary part in this salvation. The apostle Paul said that the only valid faith was an obedient faith (Romans 1:5, 16:26). This then implies that a significant difference exists between the nature of obedience and works, while mechanically there may be none.

What did that megachurch preacher mean when he emphasized “receiving” instead of “doing”? It’s sad, but many evangelicals are culturally saturated with the tendency toward mediocrity. Now with such a carnal tendency, this pastor did his congregation no favor with his emphasis on just receiving. Prodding evangelicals to step up to battle lines or showing how guilty they are before a holy God is feared to be offensive and unacceptable by the seeker-sensitive or emergent-church ministers. Sadly, very few pastors will be so bold because they know many evangelicals are resistant to this biblical challenge. Such resistance is connected to evangelical ignorance of God’s holy demands. (Jeremiah 4:22, Hosea 4:6, Matthew 7:22-23, Hebrews 12:14, James 2:24, 1 Peter 4:18, 2 Peter 3:14-18, Jude 20, 21, Revelation 3:16)

Yet when the apostle Paul was traveling about starting churches and growing Christian communities, he did not in the least minimize the importance of obedience while others did to attract a following. Consequently, Peter, James, and Jude had to warn the new growing Church against easy belief-ism.

17 For it is time for judgment to begin with the family of God; and if it begins with us, what will the outcome be for those who do not obey the gospel of God? 18 And, “If it is hard for the righteous to be saved, what will become of the ungodly and the sinner?”

1 Peter 4:17-18 (NIV)

19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

James 2:19, 20 (KJV)

“For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord.” (Jude 4 NIV).

A good test for any minister is to see if he can deliver the same message Paul preached to the Romans:

“5 But because of your stubbornness and your unrepentant heart, you are storing up wrath against yourself for the day of God’s wrath, when his righteous judgment will be revealed. 6 God “will give to each person according to what he has done. 7 To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, he will give eternal life. 8 But for those who are self-seeking and who reject the truth and follow evil, there will be
wrath and anger. 9 There will be trouble and distress for every human being who does evil: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile; 10 but glory, honor and peace for everyone who does good: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile. 11 For God does not show favoritism. 12 All who sin apart from the law will also perish apart from the law, and all who sin under the law will be judged by the law. 13 For it is not those who hear the law who are righteous in God’s sight, but it is those who obey the law who will be declared righteous.” Apostle Paul - Romans 2:5-13 (NIV)

To the same Romans, Paul preached, “Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.” Romans 3:31 (KJV)

There is significant difference between legalism and having a heart sensitive to God’s law. When one understands that God’s law is an expression of God’s unchanging character, one has a deeper appreciation for God’s law. Dr. Gregory R. Frizzell explained why a return to holiness and full obedience has been such a problem for the Church. “Much modern preaching has placed far less emphasis on repentance and surrender to the Lordship of Christ. Though perhaps unintentional, many preachers have so emphasized God’s love that the message of his awesome holiness is virtually ignored. Many have failed to preach on the full consequences of sin and judgment. Such shallow, unbiblical preaching is very different from that of the early church. It’s also very different from every generation that saw a great spiritual awakening.” Unfortunately, this has the effect of creating an evangelical idol god. The Newsweek religion writer, Kenneth L. Woodward also noted the changes among Christians: “Churchgoers take comfort: hell has all but disappeared from modern Christian theology. But this comes at a price, in moral purpose and seriousness.” Robert Bork also sees a difference in our present-day Christianity and agrees with this sad assessment of the Church and its implications on society. “It is not helpful that the ideas of salvation and damnation, of sin and virtue, which once played major roles in Christian belief, are now almost never heard of in the mainline churches. The sermons and homilies are now almost exclusively about love, kindness, and eternal life. That may be regarded, particularly by the sentimental, as an improvement in humaneness, indeed in civility, but it also means an alteration in the teaching of Christianity that makes the religion less powerful as a moral force. The carrot alone has never been a wholly adequate incentive to desired behavior.”

An easy “Christianity” has been accepted among us without a fight. Many Reformed and Arminian ministers avoid warning souls in their congregations for fear of scaring people away. Many Reformed theologians fail to warn the faithful attending souls that were never saved (converted), while the Arminian theologians fail to preach of the salvation others have lost. It is much more attractive to avoid these controversial challenging topics altogether and leave everyone with a positive sense of false security despite the past history of their denomination’s theological position on these subjects.

Only obedient followers to the Spirit of God can be described as being led by the Spirit of God. Paul’s description of those that are controlled by the Spirit of God matches the characteristics of the obedient followers of God. Paul explained that those who are not controlled by the Spirit of God do not belong to Christ at all (Romans 8: 9, 14). This
clearly suggests that many in our churches will sadly not be in heaven because of their disobedience. Jesus also spoke about this in Matthew 7:21-23.

To the Philippians, Paul left the impression that this Christian life is going to require some serious work of obedience. Confusion results when Christians fail to differentiate between “good works” and “bad works.” “Good works” is faithful obedience to our Lord’s commandments and the Holy Spirit’s promptings. “Bad works” is any self-effort intended to earn God’s favor or reward. It will not work (Ephesians 2:8, 9).

“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”

Apostle Paul - Philippians 2:12 (KJV)

The half-brother of our Lord, the apostle James, taught that the only true valid faith was very practical in good works or obedience:

“But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?” James 2:20 (KJV)

“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.”

James 2:26 (KJV)

The apostle Peter agreed that the working out of one’s salvation is not as simple and easy as many evangelical pastors might lead others to believe. And, “If it is hard for the righteous to be saved, what will become of the ungodly and the sinner?”

1 Peter 4:18 (NIV)

“Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.” 2 Peter 1:10 (KJV)

Where did these apostles get such an idea about salvation being difficult and requiring so much effort? From Jesus’ teachings. Michael Brown illustrates the striking contrast between Jesus and the compromising easy-listening ministers.

We say, “Just confess Jesus as Lord and you’re in!”
He says, “Not everyone who says to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of My Father in heaven.” (Matthew 7:21)

We say, “Just pray this prayer and it’s done!”
He says, “If anyone would come after me, he must deny himself and take up his cross daily and follow me.” (Luke 9:23)

We say, “Just come to the altar. It will only take a minute!”
He says, “Make every effort to enter through the narrow door, because many I tell you, will try to enter and will not be able to.” (Luke 13:24)

Who do you think is right?
In another passage Jesus taught, “But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Matthew 8:12 (KJV)

Jesus’ stories often had contrasts and surprises. They were called children of the kingdom because they had a real connection to God’s kingdom. The children of the kingdom were those privileged individuals with the knowledge of God and a real potential of entering God’s kingdom. They were also the ones voted most likely by their peers to enter the kingdom of heaven. They thought they were children of God’s kingdom and for good reasons. While they had the words of God, they still missed heaven. How did that happen? They did not have God’s interpretation to the words of God they possessed.

This happened because the nature of God’s character was changed in the minds of the worshippers. Whenever this happens, it is called idolatry. About one thousand years before Christ, this competition for worshippers was observed to be an issue for King Jeroboam. Israel had just divided into northern and southern kingdoms. Jeroboam was the king in the north and he feared political repercussions if his subjects comingled with the people in the south as they went to Jerusalem to worship. So he instituted two places in his domain to make it more convenient for the northern people to worship (1 Kings 12:26-27). Over time this lead to compromise and the worship of a different god. Finally, God judge them severely and they paid an enormous price in human suffering.

George Barna of the Barna Research Group also noted that “…churches and other ministries have fallen prey to the competitive spirit of the American system. Many of our religious organizations have focused on competing for bodies, dollars and talent.”

The problem with this competitive spirit for worshippers is that it gives birth to easy, convenient spirituality. One must be careful with the challenges they present to their congregations. Easy spirituality introduced idolatry to northern Israel and easy evangelical idolatry to us today. Anything that changes the nature of God in anyone’s mind is idolatry. Evangelicals now worship the god of all grace and nothing but grace. It doesn’t take a rocket scientist to see the message of grace is much more appealing than God’s judgment.

Sociologist James Davison Hunter agreed that “the image of God as the Judge of nations and of people constitutes a relative small part of the Evangelical god concept… so the ‘soft’ side of God continues to dominate his image in the Evangelical worldview.”

As a result of idolatry in Israel, the prophets Amos, Hosea, Isaiah, Micah, and Zechariah warned the people of God of God’s coming judgment on them. The parallels between the people of God during the prophets’ life time and today’s evangelicals are amazingly similar. Like Israel, many evangelicals are ignorant of God’s uncompromising requirements in personal and social issues.

A popular religious form of devotion existed among God’s people. They loved to assemble in God’s house and sing songs to God. They mistakenly believed their form of devotion was acceptable worship and pleasing to God (Joel 2:13, Amos 5:21-23, Isaiah 58). On the surface the people approached God, yet in reality there was no depth or real
passion after God (Hosea 4:15, 6:6, 7:14, 8:13, 10:2, 11:12). They had religious fellowship, form, and tradition but in reality no connection with God. This was evident by their personal lifestyles and the godless public policies they tolerated. They did very little to nothing to discipline themselves to learn the full mind of God (Hosea 4:1, 6, 9, Amos 3:10). Thus, they did not know the full, balanced character of God or what God required.

The people were attracted to leaders that were enjoyable to listen to (Hosea 4:8-9, Micah 2:11, 3:11). Fellowship, fun, and entertainment were valued more than seeking after God's full truth. (Hosea 9:7-8, Zechariah 7:4-14). These people had a form of godliness and religious training, but were not really serious in having God be the Lord of everything in their personal, private, or public social lives. Examples of private decadence are found in Amos 2:7, 5:11-12, Micah 2:1-2, 3:2, 9-11, 4:12, Hosea 3:1-2,6; 4:13-14, 5:4, 6:6-7, 7:13-16. Examples of social irresponsibility and failures are found in Isaiah 58:6, 7, Amos 2:6-8, 3:10, 5:12-17, 6:1-7, Micah 7:3, Zechariah 7:8-14. These people did not have God’s complete heart for righteous judgment concerning their public policies and God severely judged them for it.

Neither the prophets’ generation nor many evangelicals today fear God (Hosea 7:2-3, 11:10, Amos 3:6, 8, 4:6, 8-11). Belief in false theologies gave reasons for false security. Associated with this was the absence of guilt. As more people expressed such carefree sentiments among the people of God, such sentiments were interpreted as normal for God’s people. Hosea records the God’s people saying “The prophets are crazy!” and “The inspired men are mad!” (Hosea 9:7 – New Living Translation). Evangelicals are no different in quickly dismissing God’s requirements and pending judgment on them.

**An American History Lesson on Ignoring God's Law**

Thomas Jefferson, author of the Declaration of Independence, once owned slaves. Later in life, Jefferson wanted to free them, but was prohibited by the laws of Virginia. Did you ever wonder what influenced Jefferson’s desire to free his slaves?

On the Thomas Jefferson memorial in Washington D.C., one can read his words: “Indeed I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is just, that his justice cannot sleep forever. Commerce between master and slave is despotism. Nothing is more certainly written in the book of fate that these people are to be free”7 We should now ask: Where in this *book of fate* did Jefferson learn God's view on slavery and thus tremble at the potential of God's judgment on his country approximately 100 years before the Civil War?

It could be God speaking through Moses when Moses was inspired to write: “And he that stealeth a man, and selleth him…shall surely be put to death” Exodus 21:16 (KJV). Moses revealed God’s heart again with: “And you are to love those who are aliens, for you yourselves were aliens in Egypt” Deuteronomy 10:19 (NIV). “Do not mistreat an alien or oppress him, for you were aliens in Egypt” Exodus 22:21 (NIV).
Both Malachi (3:5-6) and Zechariah (7:8-13) also prophesied that God would severely judge anyone that oppressed the stranger or alien – the one that was different. Thomas Jefferson could have learned about God’s opinion on slavery from God’s Old Testament messenger - Amos. ⁶ This is what the LORD says: ‘For three sins of Gaza, even for four, I will not turn back \[my wrath\].Because she took captive whole communities and sold them to Edom’…” (1 Amos 1:6 (NIV))

Maybe Jefferson learned it from the apostle Paul. In writing to Timothy, Paul associated "menstealers" (King James) or "slave traders" (NIV) with unlawful things against sound doctrine: "⁹ Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, ¹⁰ For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for menstealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine” (1 Timothy 1:9-10 KJV).

Prior to the American Civil War, American society without slaves was unthinkable even for many Christians. This too is another example of “Christians” being influenced more by their cultural ethos than the Word of God. This is also how evangelical Christians become godless today. (Hosea 7:8, Romans 12:2)

Many Christians were confused on the slavery question. Some commentaries on Paul’s scriptures were in error. Some mistakenly thought Paul condoned slavery. Their failure was forgetting to interpret Paul’s advice as sometimes applying to indentured servitude. Indentured servitude was one method of taking and repaying a loan via volunteer servitude. Obviously, this was not the American form of slavery, and some ministers of the pre-Civil War era did recognize this.⁶

Even though the apostle Paul was fully engulfed in the powerful Roman government, society, and culture that thrived on slavery, he still bravely wrote against involuntary slavery in the 1 Timothy chapter one passage above. What congregation and ministers today will dare take a stand against the political pressure of losing their tax-exemption status or their personal peace and influence via interchurch or community conflict by refusing to remain silent on the political candidates and issues of our day? Note carefully, ministers may speak on legislative issues and propositions. The current law only prohibits comments on candidates. (It was not always like this.) Yet even with this, most ministers are still strangely silent on many issues God would want them speak on.

Many ministers today have tried to remain neutral in the face of politics which has become increasingly godless.   Gary DeMar

---

[B] “In May 1840, George F. Simmons preached two sermons on slavery in the church he pastored in Mobile, Alabama.” He had preached that the Mosaic law made no allowance for the sale of bond servants.⁸ He had to leave town just ahead of a lynch mob. A Georgia Methodist minister, James O.A. Clark, warned that a man in his position must be “prudent & cautious” when preaching on the subject of slavery, lest “a single false step” should “greatly endanger” his “usefulness.”⁹ Did you ever consider if God’s prophets and apostles ever wondered about their useful to God?
If the Old Testament prophets were alive today, they would respond to the Holy Spirit’s prompting and speak out for justice and righteousness (Isaiah 56:1; 59:4, 9, 14; Jeremiah 23:5; 50:7; Ezekiel 45:9; Amos 5:7, 24; 6:12) just as they obediently did in their day. The writer of Hebrews 11:13-16, 35-39 also explained what happened to the prophets because of their obedience.

On September 28, 2008, the Alliance Defense Fund, a Christian legal group, encouraged churches and ministers to speak out on political candidates so the IRS’s restriction could be challenged. That day was called “Pulpit Freedom Sunday.” “If complaints are filed, the ADF may get a test case to challenge the IRS regulation.”

Who is the true Lord of ministers today? Who are they bowing to--the State or Jesus Christ? Their non-commitment to pressing social and public policy issues and their fears of promoting a controversial church ethos leaves too many apathetic, ineffective, and saltless “Christians” short of Godly righteousness. Ravi Zacharias also sees our compromises and said, “What remains, then in this kind of religious belief system is a spirituality that does not need to defend itself because it is purely a private thing that does not moralize or pontificate for anyone else. It becomes a feel-good, be-quiet, and get-a-better-state-of-mind-at-the-end-of-the-day religion.” Would such a congregation even dare publish a book or pamphlet to oppose evil government decisions or support educational choice for all children?

Paul’s advice also applied to those that were suffering under involuntary servitude (Colossians 3:23-25).

While Jefferson trembled under God's law, some ministers from various denominations did dare to speak out against slavery. However, many more Christians simply accepted slavery. How many congregations actually took part in the abolition movement? Steven E. Woodworth, a historian reported: “Substantial portions of the professing church in the North either took no role in abolition or actively opposed it. By contrast, the church in the South enjoyed great unanimity on the subjects of slavery and abolitionism: the former was ordained by God, and the latter was of the Devil.”

Christians north and south grieved God in their silence on slavery and opposition to abolition as much as those that practiced slavery. Looking back, it’s obvious; American Christians, from the North to the South, trampled on this law from God and totally ignored God’s heart even while British Christians made significant political and legal progress against slavery in Britain. It should be no surprise why these Americans suffered the judgment of God. Where were the majority of America's ministers with this message of God’s grieving heart?

Obadiah helps us understand why God would be provoked with apathetic Northern Christians that owned no slaves as much as the rebellious South that did: “On the day you stood aloof while strangers carried off his wealth and foreigners entered his gates and cast lots for Jerusalem, you were like one of them” (Obadiah 1:11 NIV).
Did the early American ministers tremble more at their economic concerns via congregational disunity or God's heart in this matter? Was this issue too controversial? Was it too political? Was this a distraction to the gospel of Jesus Christ? Did any fear that outspoken political speeches would offend and thus prohibit reaching slave owners for Christ? Did they fear a loss of revenue for their next building project? Did the slavery issue still proceed from the heart of God? In this age of grace, was this law of God still applicable? Did God change his mind on the slavery question? What were the Christians of Jefferson’s day and later so distracted and concerned with? What kept them so busy and occupied that they failed to discern God’s heart on this matter? Because of their silence and truncated spirituality, their children and later descendents suffered immensely. Our children are now suffering because of godlessness in our society. And this godlessness grows because of our fears and truncated spirituality. Believing we are fully pleasing to God, we censor God’s heart on issues of righteousness and justice in our day. This is our sacred rebellion. Consequently, we are ignorant of God’s heart and have failed to respond.

So with the Northern Church spiritually asleep and the Southern Church in open rebellion, how did God intervene to motivate people on the evils of slavery? In time, some northern sentiments would change. What caused this change will be explained later. But during this time of change, “Southern Christians, believing themselves to be as good as those in the North, would demand that Northerners give at least implied consent. Northerners were convinced that Southerners were in sin on this issue and could not give that implied consent without implicating themselves in the same sin.”¹³ Eventually, the Methodist, Baptist, and Presbyterians would divide their denominations north and south over this issue. All Christians classified themselves as Bible-believing Christians in that they believed they were doing what God required and approved. Yet all along many were totally driven by the mores of their culture, as well as their mistaken theologies concerning the slavery question. Evangelical Christians are repeating these same mistakes today on other pressing public policy issues.

During the pre-civil rights period of our nation’s recent history, why were most white Christians publicly silent on Jim Crow laws? Where was the voice of the white Church when segregation was debated? Even Billy Graham noted the missed opportunity when he wrote, “The church should have been the pace-setter.”¹⁴

The problem with being a pace-setter is that it always involves controversy and this appears too much of a sacrifice for too many ministers. If God the Holy Spirit inspired the prophets and apostles to address issues of justice and righteousness, God is still concerned about issues of justice today. God has not changed (Malachi 3:6, Hebrews 13:8). God has always been concerned with salvation and righteousness in both private and public spheres. Only truncated spirituality would seek to value private religious observances over a true spirituality that is sensitive to God’s heart for the healing of all society. Salvation that does not seriously seek out God as the Lord of all of life is no salvation at all. God is only Lord, if He is the Lord of all one’s life—private and public.
When black Christians danced for joy in their sanctuaries, after helping to elect the pro-abortion president—Obama, where were their Christ-like convictions concerning the killing of the un-born? Is this sin any different than the taken advantage of a helpless, silent suffering minority? If these black Christians had fervently promoted Alan Keyes, they could have experienced a black president years earlier without the sin of promoting abortion. What were their spiritual concerns? If God abhorred slavery, discrimination, and punished nations for these sins (Amos 1:6-9) and then also punished the Canaanites and Israel for their barbaric practices of sacrificing and burning their children alive,[C] you can be sure God abhors the brutal murders of millions of unborn children today. And if God hates abortion, God hates godless indoctrination on Children more (Matthew 18:6, Luke 12:4, 5). Godless indoctrination has eternal consequences.

Does Christ cry over hungry children? Absolutely! But Christ cries over spiritual hunger more. Christ grieves over the spiritual and mental humanistic bondage of millions of American children held captive in our atheistic government schools. Where are the Christ-like concerns for the spiritually hungry among professing Christians today? Too many are guilty of the same grievous sins against ignoring God’s heart as our ancestors were on slavery. We still hide behind a form of truncated spirituality and pietism, just as they did, all the while mistakenly believing that we are pleasing God. Only fools can believe God will continue to bless this nation with such disregard for God’s laws. War, economic problems, and social decay should be no surprise to anyone that ignores God’s laws and compromise with the godless (Amos 4:6-11, Hosea 7:8, Romans 3:31).

I will take vengeance in anger and wrath upon the nations that have not obeyed me.

Micah 5:15 (NIV)

Many evangelicals work and play along side many unsaved people they know are totally unaware of their pending eternal judgment. Sadly and unfortunately, many of these same moderate and lukewarm evangelicals are also totally ignorant of their pending judgment as well. (Revelation 3:16) This judgment will begin in this life for some in the form of sowing and reaping. For others specializing in nurturing good will and truncated spirituality that know God’s heart but resist because of fear (Matthew 25:25-30, Luke 12:47, Revelation 21:8) or twisted theologies, God’s judgment will extend for all eternity. What a horrible surprise!

Prior to the Civil War, a retreat into “wholesale pietism” was another Southern response. James Henley Thornwell, a Presbyterian minister from South Carolina, believed that such problems in society were none of the Church’s business. He became author of “the doctrine of the spirituality of the church. According to his teaching, the church should have no interest at all in the affairs of this world but only in those of the next. The church’s sole purpose was to present the way of salvation so that men and women who accepted it could be assured of a future in heaven when this life was over, but nothing that went on in the present world was an appropriate subject for its concern. In short, the church should have nothing to say about slavery or anything else in society.”[15] This same

[C] Deuteronomy 12:31; 2 Chronicles 33:6
pattern is seen today with the church’s silence on school choice that indirectly favors and promotes America’s atheistic and agnostic educational system.

Slavery was convenient and acceptable to early Americans just as the government humanistic schools have become for many Christians today. It’s this acceptance of corrupt issues that grieve God and thus put evangelicals in the same disobedient state as the Old Testament prophets’ generation.

Unfortunately the “slavery issue” was not a significant spiritual concern among American Christians for many years preceding the Civil War. Yet God’s heart had not changed, nor did His revelation change that spanned over fourteen hundred years of recorded biblical history from Moses to Paul on the slavery question. So what was the price Americans paid for their apathy and indifference toward God’s law and of His clearly expressed heart as recorded in Exodus, Amos, Zachariah, Malachi and 1 Timothy?

The Price We Paid for Ignoring God’s Law

The Civil War caused 620,000 American deaths. It wasn’t until Americans were one-third into the Vietnam War dead that the total Americans killed in all other wars combined equaled the total dead caused by the American Civil War alone. Until this time, more Americans died during the Civil War than from all other American wars added together. Surely Jefferson understood and rightly trembled for his country. It was a serious mistake for American Christians to ignore how British Christians were able to politically influence their citizens against slavery and thus avoid a war over the slavery question. Did American Christians really understand that God had an expressed opinion on this and that God was to be taken seriously?

Jefferson was most wise to tremble for his country. It’s unfortunate his country did not also tremble at God's Word. The Civil War is a sad commentary against Bible-believing clergy and whole congregations that did not share Thomas Jefferson's trembling heart on this bondage that God hated. God's message through Moses, Amos, Zachariah, Malachi, and Paul should have been spread with passionate conviction. Because the clergy were silent, many Americans were ignorant. This same error is repeated today on the school choice and other social issues. Consequently, godless secularism will increase until we wake up. There is a connection between our ignorance and our pain, and Hosea rightly connects this pain to the failure of spiritual leaders.

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests.” Hosea 4:6a (KJV)

The Holy Spirit’s Involvement with Social and Political Reform

Harriet Beecher Stowe, mother of six, was trying to meditate on Christ during communion at her church, but was interrupted again and again by a horrible image of a black Christian slave being beaten to death as a Christian martyr.
Harriet would later say that this image was sent by the Lord. “The service was a blur to Harriet. When it ended, she gathered the children, took them home, and wrote out on paper what she had seen in her mind that morning in church. Harriet had written magazine articles before, but she had never attempted anything like this. What she wrote so shocked her that she put the pages away and didn’t turn to them again. Some months later, in March of 1851, her husband, Calvin, discovered them. He read them and – moved to tears – brought them to his wife. ‘Hattie,’ he said, ‘this is the climax of that story of slavery you promised sister Katey you would write. Begin at the beginning and work up to this, and you’ll have your book.’ Thus was born Uncle Tom’s Cabin, the novel that swept a nation to the brink of civil war.”

********************************************************************************

American War Dead
(Excluding American Civil War Dead)

Revolutionary War ......................................................... 4,435
War of 1812 .................................................................... 2,260
Mexican - American War .............................................. 13,283
Spanish-American War .................................................. 2,446
World War I ................................................................. 116,516
World War II ............................................................... 405,399
Korean War ................................................................. 36,516
Vietnam ......................................................................... 58,198
Gulf ............................................................................... 382

Total War Dead Excluding American Civil War........ 639,435


When President Abraham Lincoln met Harriet for the first time, he said; “So this is the little lady who made this big war?”

No, Mr. President; Harriet didn’t start this war. God permitted it because He was grieved by His disobedient children. Their ministers were cowards, and whole congregations were rebellious, ignorant fools to ignore His Word and value their personal peace and affluence over God’s Word. Consequently, their personal peace and affluence were taken away from them. Present day Americans face a similar warning and pattern of judgment. God is no respecter of persons (Romans 2:11) or nations (Micah 5:15). This pattern of

[D] Adam Hochschild’s book, Bury the Chains: Prophets & Rebels in the Fight to Free an Empire’s Slaves tells of the “religious right” minority (12 deeply religious men in London in 1787) that turned their world right side up and ended slavery when the whole world thought this was strange.
judgment on personal peace and affluence is similar to God's judgment on Israel at various times in its history as well.

How could so many Christians be ignorant of God's grieving heart over the slavery issue of their day? How could they ignore God? Their ministers were intimidated into silence, and American Christians were influenced more from their cultural ethos than God's Word; thus, whole congregations did not know God's heart. Therefore, they did not know God. Had American ministers unified and spread the message of Jefferson's trembling, prophetic, and biblical concern, as John Wesley did in Britain, it's very possible the American Civil War could have been avoided altogether.

Where were the Christians during this time and before? "Slave traders abducted peaceful African villagers and hauled them off in chains. They were packed so tightly on filthy, disease-infested ships that up to 50 percent died en route to this country. Every one of those deaths constituted a murder, yet there was a willing market in America for the survivors [by people who went to Christian churches]. They were bought and sold like animals, without regard to family integrity. Children were taken from parents and husbands were separated from wives. Some were beaten, some were raped, and some were worked to death. The entire system was reprehensible, yet it was embraced by a society that professed to be God-fearing."18

Where was the outrage among Christians? Where were the Christian ministers during this time? What will God do to them on their judgment day? What will God do to us that know to speak out against injustice, but don't? How will God judge those that fail to instruct in God's full heart on social injustice, godless cultural expressions, and political unfairness? Only an ignorant and spiritually lukewarm person distracted by the cares of this life or confused with mistaken theologies that denies the judgment of God could be so unconcerned about millions of children indoctrinated with atheism and agnosticism. Only a fool could remain at ease about standing before a holy God with such a cavalier and apathetic attitude. And only the simple fail to see the potential dangers for their children in this life and the next.

A prudent man sees danger and takes refuge, but the simple keep going and suffer for it.  
Proverbs 22:3 (NIV)

The prudent see danger and take refuge, but the simple keep going and suffer for it.  
Proverbs 27:12 (NIV)

We cry over hungry and hurting children as we should. However, atheism and agnosticism hurts children much more. We American evangelicals tend to view ourselves as being on the cutting edge of spirituality. Yet British Christians left a historical legacy of being much more in tune with God's heart on the slavery issue. They were able to resolve slavery without a war under the Christian leadership of William Wilberforce. Wilberforce was ridiculed in the press and vilified by his opponents. Could today's don't-rock-the-boat evan-jellys (spineless evangelicals) stand against any of this in the fight to free children from atheistic slavery? Wilberforce's opponents argued that some two-
thirds of England’s economy was tied to slavery. The abolitionists’ spirituality, however, included a sincere and dedicated concern that was not timid in their political process. They struggled for forty-six years before the Bill for the Abolition of Slavery was passed in the House of Commons. Slavery was finally abolished throughout Great Britain, and all slaves within the British territories were emancipated forever. Oh happy day!

Just as the Holy Spirit moved through Harriet Beecher Stowe, the Holy Spirit was active through John Wesley as well. Wesley publicly opposed slavery. “By the mid-1830s, their influence in Britain had helped to eliminate slavery within the British Empire.”19 Note carefully this preceded the American Civil War by almost thirty years. Wilberforce knew that he needed to awaken the conscience of the carnal “Christians” of his day, so in 1797 he published a book titled: A Practical View of the Prevailing Religious System of Professed Christians, in the Higher and Middle Classes in This Country, Contrasted with Real Christianity. Today, in keeping with our Christian market driven strategies of not offending anyone, similar to building mega-churches, it’s been re-titled: A Practical View of Christianity.[E]

One denomination recently published in Contemporary Issues: “The essence of the church is not earthly and temporal, but spiritual and eternal (John 18:36). The priority of the church is to preach Christ exclusively (1 Corinthians 2:2). The mission of the church is to proclaim the gospel (Matthew 28:19).”20 Christians have heard this message before from James Henley Thornwell, the Presbyterian minister from South Carolina and author that promoted indifference to the social problems in the South. This article in Contemporary Issues is a clear statement of truncated spirituality from a denomination that once had a rich heritage of God’s Holy Spirit working among them! There is no question that the priority of the Church is to preach the gospel of Jesus Christ, but never exclusively! This grieves the Holy Spirit. Where in scripture does it teach such a mutually exclusive gospel?! If this gospel does not include the whole heart of Christ as revealed in both testaments to occupy and reform all of life, it’s not the full Gospel. It is a different gospel. If the body of Christ – the Church – does not live to do the full work of Christ, which was very earthly, dirty, and controversial, it is not the Gospel of Jesus

[E] A brief look at Wilberforce’s Table of Contents shows the concerns he had with his fellow “Christians” and explains why defeating British slave trade took so long. The lesson for evangelicals today is simple - When Christians wakeup we can be a significant catalyst for social and political reform.

Chapter 1 …. Inadequate Conceptions of the Importance of Christianity
Chapter 2….. Corruption of Human Nature
Chapter 4….. On the Prevailing Inadequate Conceptions Concerning the Nature and the Strictness of Practical Christianity
Chapter 5….. On the Excellence of Christianity in Certain Important Particulars – Arguments Which Results Thence in Proof of its Divine Origin.
Chapter 6….. Brief Inquiry into the Present State of Christianity in This Country, with Some of the Causes Which Have Led to its Critical Circumstances – Its Importance to Us as a Political Community, and Practical Hints for Which the Foregoing Considerations Give Occasion
Christ. This expression of piety is the same expression that left slavery unchallenged and blacks in bondage to Jim Crow laws later. It is this same truncated spirituality that has enslaved millions of American students in atheistic, humanistic indoctrination centers called “public” schools now, as the NEA and its political agenda goes unchecked. This message that “the essence of the church is not earthly” is the same pathetic message that caused spiritual and physical death at Columbine High School and other schools across our nation. Know clearly, that despite the multimillion dollar sanctuaries this denomination has built across America, such thinking has hampered the true Gospel of Jesus Christ, grieved the Holy Spirit, yielded social decadence, and will bring God’s judgment on all those that know differently, but have not the courage to speak differently. Those ignorant will still suffer: “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge” (Hosea 4:6a KJV).

The late Dr. Francis Schaeffer reminded us of the Holy Spirit’s influence in social reforms: But always in every revival there’s been a third element, it has always brought social change. Cambridge historians would tell you, who aren’t Christians, that if it wasn’t for the Wesleyan revival and the social change that Wesley’s revival had brought, that England would have had its own form of the French revolution. It was Wesley saying people must be treated correctly, and dealing down into the social needs of the day that made it possible for England to have its bloodless revolution in contrast to France’s bloody revolution.

In Nehemiah’s day, the people dedicated themselves to rebuilding the wall first. After this a spiritual phenomenon took place at the Water Gate that evangelicals mistakenly describe as the beginning of a revival. In actuality, the spiritual phenomenon or revival had already started with the unity to rebuild the wall. The completed wall was the apologetic to Israel’s enemies that God had helped Israel. (See Nehemiah 6:15-16.) It was after the wall was completed, that “all the people assembled as one man in the square before the Water Gate” (Nehemiah 8:1). While the book of the law was read, the people stood and cried. This went on for hours (Nehemiah 8:3-11).

One should never expect the move of God to be evident among us in the fullest sense if we continue to grieve the heart of God with our exclusive private religious priorities. If we want the Holy Spirit to be in us and among us, we must first begin to be sensitive to the Holy Spirit by rebuilding the walls of protection around all youth and families that would desire this, not just our own. We must first stop grieving the Holy Spirit by our inactivity if we really want to see anything like a revival we have been dreaming of and praying for in our nation. Why should the Holy Spirit respond if we are not willing to engage our public policy issues that now affect so many young people towards godlessness?

When we become sensitive to God’s heart – what God loves and hates in social, political, and cultural issues, not just in our private lives or churches, but in all of life even as it is expressed in God’s law, then we will have a heart that is fully sensitive to the Holy Spirit that spoke through the prophets and apostles. This is the same Holy Spirit who spoke through the prophets in challenging kings. When we become so sensitive, then we will
begin to cry as well. It’s not possible for anyone to be sensitive to the Holy Spirit if they ignore the work and writings of the Holy Spirit in both Old or New Testaments (2 Peter 1:21). It is possible for the Holy Spirit to convict the sinner that’s totally ignorant of God and His plan. God is gracious. However, this pattern doesn’t seem to follow for God’s people. It isn’t possible for God’s people to be sensitive to the Holy Spirit and simultaneously ignore the Holy Spirit’s already written concerns and grievances. This is how we have rejected God’s Word (Hosea 4:6). The lesson from Nehemiah’s generation is that their sacrifice of courageous obedience preceded their revival.

In Awakening Cry – Once again God is commissioning revivalists, reformers and rebels for the ultimate cause, author Pete Creig states: “In the light of all this, it is a naïve form of Christian fatalism that does nothing, waiting helplessly for God to send revival. I would suggest that such passivity flows from a misunderstanding of God’s sovereignty which leaves us powerless pawns in his will. In sharp contrast with this unbiblical understanding of the relationship between God’s activity and ours, the parable of the talents clearly teaches that if we sit around and do nothing with the gifts and graces that God has already given us we will be severely judged. Such servants are described as ‘wicked’ and ‘lazy’ (Matthew 25:26). It seems vital to me that Christians recognize the part they have to play in preparing society for revival.”

After Nehemiah’s wall building crew worked together building a wall of protection, God blessed with an outpouring of His Spirit. Hearts and lives were changed.

The apostle James reveals true spirituality: “Religion that God our Father accepts as pure and faultless is this: to look after orphans and widows in their distress and to keep oneself from being polluted by the world” (James 1:27 NIV).

The Holy Spirit saw that mother I met crying because her son was the target of homosexuals at his government school while teachers and administrators, the local representative, and evangelicals did nothing to stop it. The Holy Spirit sees those youth struggling with their faith because of government endorsement of atheism and agnosticism. Are evangelicals equally distressed for the widows and single moms whose children are defenseless against the godlessness pressed upon their children in their government schools? Such children are at risk of violence, drugs, sexual peer pressures, and Master-degreed humanistic instructors, all imposing godless death-styles and secular humanistic beliefs as the new norm. That mother’s son is now made to feel like he is the freak if he doesn’t comply with the homosexual pressures at his school. Today’s widows and single moms have much more distressing concerns than just hunger and clothing to worry about. James teaches that their concerns should be ours.

How do you honestly think God views a person that feels no passion to engage the enemy to free a soul from being a prisoner of Satan’s lies, influence, or from the potential torment in an eternal hell? How can one even claim to have the love of Christ and remain apathetic and indifferent to the cries of millions of students asking, “Does God exist?” How can one dare say that they too are a follower and servant of Christ, if they have not the courage or desire to attempt to “destroy the works of the devil” (1 John 3:8) in our atheistic government schools? How can anyone claim to be a minister of Christ and so
heartlessly fail to inform Christians in their congregation to be ready to give an answer (1 Peter 3:15) and thus oppose the works of Satan in every private and public dimension? How can we dare believe schools are value neutral, when every academic, cultural, and social indicator shows otherwise?

Do you think God takes pleasure with anyone that chooses to identify with Christ only in religious duties of worship, prayer, fasting, church attendance, or foreign missions? Jesus Christ, the prophets, and apostles would rebuke such an individual. God takes no pleasure with silent accommodating ministers or anyone that yields to the atheistic/agnostic mindset or soul-binding-politics of humanistic school indoctrination.

Why is it OK to build schools in Africa, South America, or China with our tithe but not in our own backyard?  

Gary DeMar in Whoever Controls the Schools Rules the World

Jesus gave insight on just how surprised the disobedient and spiritually ignorant will be on their day of judgment:  

42 For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: 43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.  

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?  

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.  

46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.  

Jesus the Christ - Matthew 25:35-40 (KJV)

Jesus could very well have also asked, “I was persecuted and oppressed with humanistic questions that most in my classroom could not answer. Where were you and why did you allow such a public policy of godlessness in your politically determined “public” schools? Many in my humanistic school wanted to go to a Christian school, but could not because of the public policy you let stand. Why did you believe the National Education Association’s political lies and protect their monopoly in public education? Why did you let stand such a godless public policy? Why didn’t you help make it possible for everyone to go to a Christian school? And why didn’t you encourage serious apologetic and Christ-honoring holiness training in your Christian schools? Why were you not concerned with the least among you?

What will you say on your judgment day?

Chuck Colson admitted, “Suddenly the pastor’s words caught my attention. The mission of the church, he said, was to prepare for Christ’s return in five ways: prayer, Bible study, worship, fellowship, and evangelism…. Of course these five spiritual exercises are central to the Church’s life; but we can never overlook our responsibility to redeem all of culture as well. Though well intentioned, the pastor’s words were a prescription for the continued marginalization of the Church.”

John R. W. Stott agrees with Colson. “Our God is often too small because He is too religious. We imagine that He is chiefly interested in religion, in religious buildings,
religious activities and religious books. Of course He is concerned about these things, but only if they are related to the whole of life. According to the Old Testament prophets and the teaching of Jesus, God is very critical of ‘religion,’ if by that is meant religious services divorced from real life, loving service, and the moral obedience of the heart.”

Salvation is primary, but salvation is not exclusive. If salvation does not involve all of life as Jesus being the Lord of all life, it isn’t salvation (Matthew 7:21). Don’t ever believe that God is only interested in the salvation of souls alone. The God of both the Old and New Testaments left no such witness to us.

Is it possible to do justly (Micah 6:8) and remain insensitive to the humanistic indoctrination of our youth? Will we ever become aware how we have grieved the Holy Spirit in our ignorance if our spiritual leaders fail to tell us? That’s never been done before in a Sunday classroom. Such topics may prove to be too controversial. It doesn’t seem to be spiritual or uplifting. Evangelicals can have such a narrow focus on the nature of doing ministry and of spirituality. That’s why we are so ineffective and why our culture is sliding into hell. Because we fail to inform God’s view on all of life, we remain stupid, indifferent, and apathetic. And ignorance breeds apathy. We don’t know so we don’t care. We don’t know all our options on how to engage the enemy, so we don’t. So we fail to oppose the works of Satan as Christ did (1 John 3:8).

How do Christians respond to the ever-increasing cultural decadence? Judge Robert Bork gave the answer: “With each new evidence of deterioration, we lament for a moment, and then become accustomed to it.” In The American Scholar article, “Defining Deviancy Down,” Senator Daniel Patrick Moynihan of New York said that America is undergoing a profound social crisis, and the nation has more or less decided to pretend that it isn’t happening. Decadence becomes redefined. “Illegitimate birth” becomes “out-of-wedlock birth,” then “single parenting.” A New York judge, Edwin Torres, says that “the slaughter of the innocent marches unabated: subway riders, bodega [Hispanic community grocery/wine shop] owners, cab drivers, babies, in laundromats, at cash machines, on elevators, in hallways.” We then move from “denial” to “normalizing.” John Leo, a Universal Press Syndicate columnist, agrees: “When the evidence is clear, and bright people won’t accept it, we are in the presence of denial. The sad truth is that America’s social crisis won’t be solved, or even addressed, until there’s enough outrage to cut through the denial and pretense that keep it going.”

Could it be that we are so carnally blind to our rejection of God in our public policies and social institutions that we fail to see how the rejection of God and our apathies affects all this?

The inculcating of God’s policies is the responsibility of Christians and no one else. Unfortunately, the evidence of our carnal blindness to our own sins becomes evident when we blame others for our social and economic problems. Obama and Congress are not the primary problems. Godlessness among evangelicals is the primary problem.
Amos told us how God looks at us: “Woe to them that are at ease in Zion” (Amos 6:1). God took condemning notice for those that were “not grieved for the affliction of Joseph” (Amos 6:6). The Holy Spirit speaking through King David said to “Defend the poor and fatherless: do justice to the afflicted and needy. Deliver the poor and needy: rid them out of the hand of the wicked” (Psalm 82:3-4). Jeremiah agreed: “Execute judgment in the morning, and deliver him that is spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor, lest my fury go out like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings” (Jeremiah 21:12b). Executing judgment was to be implemented immediately and early – in the morning. God gave no license for us to do this on our own terms or schedule. We are tasked to set Satan’s prisoners free now.

[Proverbs 24:11-12 (NIV)]

“Rescue those being led away to death; hold back those staggering toward slaughter. If you say, But we knew nothing about this, does not he who weighs the heart perceive it? Does not he who guards your life know it? Will he not repay each person according to what he has done?”

[Ezekiel 33:6-8 (KJV)]

But if the watchman sees the sword coming and does not blow the trumpet to warn the people and the sword comes and takes the life of one of them, that man will be taken away because of his sin, but I will hold the watchman accountable for his blood. Son of man, I have made you a watchman for the house of Israel; so hear the word I speak and give them warning from me. When I say to the wicked, O wicked man, you will surely die, and you do not speak out to dissuade him from his ways, that wicked man will die for his sin, and I will hold you accountable for his blood.”

Like rebellious Israel, we have commanded God’s prophets not to speak (Amos 2:11-12). The prophets among us are silenced with: Christians should be neutral, non-offensive, and never challenge the mandate of separation of church and state. (There is no separation of church and state as long as the state imposes atheism and agnosticism on young children.) Politics in church is inappropriate. We don’t want to offend anyone. That topic just doesn’t seem to be spiritual or uplifting for a Sunday school class. We do not ever want to be confrontational to anyone. We always want to end on a positive note. We want this class to be alive in the spirit, not what someone read from a book.

The late Dr. Francis A. Schaeffer in his The Great Evangelical Disaster wrote: It is my firm belief that when we stand before Jesus Christ, we will find that it has been the weakness and accommodation of the evangelical group on the issues of the day that has been largely responsible for the loss of the Christian ethos which has taken place in the area of culture in our own country over the last forty to sixty years.

To remain ignorant or to keep people ignorant of God’s heart on any issue, private or public is to provoke God to anger. Is the Church ever going to engage our culture and demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God? Are we ever going to take captive every humanistic thought, mistaken theological sound bite, and wicked public policy and make it obedient to Christ’s thoughts? (2 Corinthians 10:5). Do we really understand that the God of all creation is much bigger than the religious-issues god we mostly associate with God? Do you think that the Holy
Spirit is not at all grieved because of the thousands of students indoctrinated in atheistic humanism while hundreds of empty Sunday school classrooms exist in every major city in every state in America, Monday through Friday? A school choice policy could change this immediately. Do we really know that God has an opinion on our public system of education and its profound impact upon our youth? If our loving heavenly Father is concerned with the humane treatment of animals (Exodus 23:5, Deuteronomy 25:4, Proverbs 12:10), would He not also be grieved with the humanistic influence on children in our government schools? Do we care that children from dysfunctional families, who are trapped in our humanistic government schools, are very much like an un-reached people group? In fact these children are in a worse situation. Many of these children are being inoculated against Christianity at taxpayer expense. Now the evangelist’s job is becoming harder. Salvation is primary, but let us not be spiritually truncated and stuck in our traditions on how to evangelize. The salvation of America’s youth is pending.

To refuse to accept biblical standards is to actively oppose God’s plan and destiny for our world. To remain in the dark about what’s right and wrong is nothing short of disregarding His wisdom. Nothing short of His anger will follow.

Stephen A. Bly in God’s Angry Side

“Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.” James 4:17

Then is basic Christianity the belief that Jesus is the Son of God who came to be the Saviour of the World? No, it is not even that. To assent to his divine person, to acknowledge man’s need of salvation, and to believe in Christ’s saving work are not enough. Christianity is not just a creed; it involves action. Our intellectual belief may be beyond criticism; but we have to translate our beliefs into deeds.

What must we do, then? We must commit ourselves, heart and mind, soul and will, home and life, personally and unreservedly to Jesus Christ. We must humble ourselves before him. We must trust in him as our Saviour and submit to him as our Lord; and then go on to take our place as loyal members of the church and responsible citizens in the community.

John R.W. Stott in Basic Christianity

**When God Laughs**

Immediately after the September 11, 2001 terrorists’ attack, churches experienced a modest increase in attendance. People seemed to be publicly open to acknowledging God or at least thinking about Him. In just a matter of a few weeks, it was determined to be only a momentary social phenomena. People again retreated back to their secular ways of living without considering God at all. Early during this time, Jane Clayson on the *Early Show* asked Billy Graham’s daughter, Anne Graham Lotz, “How could God let something like this [terrorists’ attack in New York city] happen?” Anne immediately replied, “I believe God is deeply saddened by this, just as we are, but for years we’ve been telling God to get out of our schools, to get out of our government and to get out of
our lives. And being the gentleman He is, I believe He has calmly backed out. How can we expect God to give us His blessing and His protection if we demand He leave us alone?”

One could also ask, “How can we expect God’s blessings on our nation, if we do nothing in regards to public education policy that favors atheism and agnosticism in our politically driven government schools?” There is no separation of church and state.

John MacArthur’s National Day of Prayer sermon (May 3, 2007) had the same message that God has abandoned America. Why should this be any surprise to anyone since we have abandoned God in so many ways in our culture, public education, policies, and even in our “Christian” sanctuaries by failing to instruct on God’s view of social reforms?

Why should the Holy Spirit even convict Christians of their sins if Christians have rebelliously ignored God’s Holy Spirit inspired Word? This too is a form of God abandonment (Judges 16:20, Ephesians 4:30). So we don’t even feel like these social sins are so wrong and we fail to realize that this lack of feeling is itself a form of abandonment by God. We fail to realize that God’s standard is revealed clearly in His word and is thus available to all of us. Morality, truth, and God’s will are never determined by how we feel or think about it (Isaiah 55:8, 9), but by what God has said. Are we aggressively seeking God’s Word?

Immediately following the Columbine Massacre, we also witnessed packed churches. Everyone seemed to be praying, meditating, or seeking comfort from the local clergy. When Kayla Rolland was killed by her fellow six-year-old classmate at Theo J. Buell Elementary School in Flint Michigan in 2001 after a playground dispute, it was reported that, “Most of the students were taken to a church across the street.”

This behavior of ignoring God until disaster strikes isn’t new to mankind’s history. Approximately 3,000 years ago, a wise prophet, under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, reported part of God’s response to all this with:

> If you had responded to my rebuke, I would have poured out my heart to you and made my thoughts known to you. But since you rejected me when I called and no one gave heed when I stretched out my hand, since you ignored all my advice and would not accept my rebuke, I in turn will laugh at your disaster; I will mock when calamity overtakes you— when calamity overtakes you like a storm, when disaster sweeps over you like a whirlwind, when distress and trouble overwhelm you. Then they will call to me but I will not answer; they will look for me but will not find me. Since they hated knowledge and did not choose to fear the LORD, since they would not accept my advice and spurned my rebuke, they will eat the fruit of their ways and be filled with the fruit of their schemes. For the waywardness of the simple will kill them, and the complacency of fools will destroy them; but whoever listens to me will live in safety and be at ease, without fear of harm.” Proverbs 1:23-33 (NIV)
The waywardness of the humanists is pure rebellion. Is there any question this attitude of hating the knowledge of God and not choosing to fear the Lord is rampant in our courts and schools with pride? Is there any question that we will all continue to eat the fruit of godless secular schemes of death and violence until we really want a changed policy in public education and our courts?

Is there any doubt that evangelicals have been complacent fools in aggressively training their children to be apologetic warriors or in implementing godly education policies via school choice? When a school choice issue is placed on local ballots, the majority of evangelicals have a cavalier attitude in supporting it, while hundreds of godless humanistic and politically active teachers volunteer to flood neighborhoods and phone banks to spread their deceptions, lies, and fears against school choice. Even some evangelicals join them and share their fears of state controls. Many communities do not have even one voice of opposition to the teachers’ union godless mob. Our carnal preoccupations of profit and pleasures and our leaders’ silence on the issues have kept us all ignorant, unmotivated, and too busy to respond to this evolving social godless crisis. Is there any question that our “Christian” leaders have been more fearful of offending public school teachers in their sanctuaries than fearing the results of godless indoctrination of our youth or the evil ramifications of atheism?

So the humanist’s waywardness and the complacency of evangelical fools are bringing socialistic state controls to our political system, decadence to our culture, death to children in schools, and to us all.

When our ministers fail to preach all of Scripture, they fail to be God’s priests to us. (Hosea 4:6) Because we gravitate to those that stroke our spiritual self-esteem and avoid those that challenge our truncated spirituality, our ministers have failed to preach and we stay stupid. When was the last time a minister caused you to begin a serious self-soul-searching examination with a prompting to engage the political and cultural evil systems of our nation and community? Don’t fool yourself for a moment. Sin is not restricted to personal secret rebellion. Sin can be collective and rampant in institutions, communities, organizations, churches, and nations at the public policy level.

Sermons on the following verses are not easy messages to deliver or accept, but they are Holy Spirit given: “He who overcomes will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out his name from the book of life, but will acknowledge his name before my Father and his angels” (Jesus the Christ - Revelation 3:5 NIV). Therefore, one can have his/her name blotted out of the book of life if an obedient overcoming life is not realized. The Calvinists would say that such a person was never converted. The Armenian would say

[F] Not all teachers agree with the NEA. Some will start their own schools when a true school choice policy exists. Clifford W. Cobb, author of Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities, reports that “Between one-fourth and one-third of the teachers in urban public schools send their own children to independent schools.” He further elaborates, “In the Los Angeles-Long Beach metro area, 29 percent of public-school teachers send their kids to private schools” In other places he reports the figures as: San Francisco - 28 percent, Atlanta – 25 percent, and in Albuquerque – 30 percent. These are amazing percentages for such “wonderful” government schools. On the national level, 22% of NEA teachers put their children in private schools.
such a person lost their salvation. The conclusion either way, is that obedience is an important element in salvation.

“26 If we deliberately keep on sinning after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, 27 but only a fearful expectation of judgment and of raging fire that will consume the enemies of God. 28 Anyone who rejected the law of Moses died without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. 29 How much more severely do you think a man deserves to be punished who has trampled the Son of God under foot, who has treated as an unholy thing the blood of the covenant that sanctified him, and who has insulted the Spirit of grace?” Hebrews 10:26-29 (NIV)

Therefore, one can grieve the Holy Spirit via continued disobedience and rebellion to such an extent that they can never be saved despite the fact that they were once “sanctified with the blood of the covenant.” An obedient overcoming life is a requirement for eternal life.

If your favorite minister has not caused you to self-examine your spiritual state, then be warned. You may be spiritually deceived about your eternal state. “Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?”

Apostle Paul – 2 Corinthians 13:5 (KJV)

If we are comfortable with teaching values without God or afraid to address godless public policies because of their controversial nature, on what basis should we expect God’s protection or blessing? If we are happy to have God around as a part-time weekend hobby, why should we expect God to watch over us at all? With our rebellion to have God on our own terms why should we ever seek comfort from God when disaster strikes? We would never think to call on our friends only when we need something from them. They’re not stupid. They would quickly discern that we are using them. How stupid are we to treat God in this same manner? Of all people, evangelicals should know from history and Scripture that values taught without God is foolish. How can we consider ourselves to be faithful Christians or even free Americans, when the state indoctrinates children in atheism and agnosticism? How can we claim to be free Americans when basic academic freedom doesn’t exist for the teaching of all sciences surrounding origin issues? Instead, we accept bad science and state endorsement of atheism and agnosticism on children with no choice.

Will we ever care enough to pray so that parents will be able to take their children to the schools of their own choice? Note carefully that schools of choice does not exactly defeat humanism, just forced humanism. Schools-of-choice could inculcate godly biblical values per the convictions of each parent’s heart, and many such schools could point others to salvation. Many non-Christian parents in our inner cities would immediately send their children to a drug and gang free Christian school if they had such a choice. Should not this be our most cherished religious liberty, the daily inculcating of godly values into our children and the children of others that could choose if they had the freedom?
But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Jesus the Christ - Matthew 18:6 (KJV)

The righteousness of God mocks the stupid and stubborn rebellion of anyone that would try to live life without Him or even attempt to have God on a person’s own terms. Since evangelicals have compromised with the secularists, on what basis should we not also reap the results of godless schemes we have all sown together?

It is clearly irrational to assume that a God who is real can safely be ignored. Phillip Johnson

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’ ” Hosea 4:6 (NIV)

“Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord” Hebrews 12:14 (KJV). Did you see that holiness is a requirement for entrance into heaven? Holiness involves a heart fully after God and His righteousness in all of life. It includes both private and public moralities. Evangelicals that fail to follow seriously after God’s holiness in all of life’s responsibilities will not reap the heavenly reward they think is coming to them. No one can have God on their own terms. We must fully surrender to all of God’s terms (Romans 2:6-16).

In Conclusion

Popular evangelical salvation is presented in the easiest and most comfortable of terms. Because of this, many people have the mistaken impression that salvation is attainable only via the profession of faith alone. This is because it is believed that salvation is an event only. There is no mention that salvation is also a process of obedience. The message that true biblical faith is an obedient faith is deemphasized. (Romans 1:5, 16:26; Philippians 2:12; James 2:24) This is too challenging. It could leave feelings of guilt. It may even scare some people away. In truth, salvation is both an event[6] and an obedient process[7] in the life of the believer.

“Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.” Philippians 2:12b

Salvation is primary, but not the only calling for Christians. Salvation that leaves an individual unchallenged toward doing the work of Christ is no salvation at all. An

unprofitable servant is a rebellious servant – no servant in reality. Jesus taught that such a person was to be cast into out darkness (Matthew 25:24-30).

The disciples were called Christians first in Antioch (Acts 11:26), not because they were nice and gentle people, but because they followed Christ’s teachings and behavior. Christ was both gentle and challenging. The first Church carried on the very works of Christ. The apostle John has summarized the work of Christ succinctly when he wrote: “For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil” (1 John 3:8). This is exactly the duty of the Church as Christ’s representative on earth today. But the question remains, will the Church even become engaged in opposing the works of the devil as is evident in our public education policy of humanistic indoctrination?

Because many evangelicals believe Jesus was not a political activist, they mistakenly think themselves free of such responsibility. Evangelicals fail to see just how pervasively Jesus fought against the devil even on the political level. Jesus returned Herod’s intimidation and threat with his own independent, bold, and public protest. (See Luke 13:31-33.) Political activists do exactly this. And why was this political resistance recorded in the Bible if it wasn’t important that we know about it? When John the Baptist reprimanded Herod for his immoral lifestyle, Jesus did not caution John to tone down his public protest of Herod (Matthew 14:3-4). Jesus approved of John’s ministry. If any minister so spoke against a political leader today, his church potentially could lose tax-exemption status. Deacons would quickly complain and silence the pastor. Do you think tax-exemption status would have changed John’s or Jesus’ response?

Most of Jesus’ life was spent as a carpenter than as an itinerant preacher. If ministers are to be really spiritual, maybe they should also work as carpenters in furniture shops for about twenty years before their public ministry is started. Obviously, this is foolish. The message of the politically apathetic is that we should follow exactly everything Jesus did and did not do in life. Those that think in terms of mechanical equivalence have a problem. Jesus never married or played the trombone either. There would be no playing trombones or getting married if we are to follow absolutely everything Jesus did and didn’t do. We are spiritually truncated and legalistic as the Pharisees if we fail to oppose evil in any area simply because we think such actions do not exactly match the mechanics of Christ’s life and ministry. Jesus warned against the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees (Matthew 16:6-12) which implies Jesus cares very much about the teaching people are exposed to. If Jesus cared about the Pharisees and Sadducees wrong teaching, would Jesus not also care about the indoctrination of atheism and agnosticism on children? If Jesus cares and we don’t care, how do you honestly think Christ views us and our spirituality? How can we even attempt to ask for God’s blessing with an apathetic attitude toward public education dedication to secularism? Secularism is not a neutral philosophy.

Christian consumerism pressures all congregations to adopt the lowest common denominator toward Christian maturity. Competitive pressures exist to attract and retain parishioners. Christian maturity is a challenging message today. It involves opposing
Satan in unpleasant spiritual conflict. Many do not want to hear this. The apostle Paul mentioned this danger: “For the time will come when men will not put up with sound doctrine. Instead, to suit their own desires, they will gather around them a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear. They will turn their ears away from the truth and turn aside to myths. But you, keep your head in all situations, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, discharge all the duties of your ministry.”

Apostle Paul - 2 Timothy 4:3-5 (NIV)

“11 If thou forbear to deliver them that are drawn unto death, and those that are ready to be slain; 12 If thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider it? and he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? and shall not he render to every man according to his works?” Proverbs 24:11, 12 (KJV)

There are millions of children that are “drawn into spiritual and physical death” because of our apathy to oppose the works of Satan on the political level and fight for fair public policies of school choice that includes private independent schools.

“Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?” Isaiah 58:6 (KJV)

“The response of the disciples is an act of obedience, not a confession of faith in Jesus.” Dietrich Bonhoeffer in The Cost of Discipleship

“26 Therefore, I declare to you today that I am innocent of the blood of all men. 27 For I have not hesitated to proclaim to you the whole will of God. 28 Keep watch over yourselves and all the flock of which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers. Be shepherds of the church of God, which he bought with his own blood.” Acts 20:26-28 (KJV)

Can ministers say confidently that they have proclaimed the whole council of God for all areas in life – private, public, political, social, cultural? Can Christians confess with Paul that they too are innocent of the blood of all men while Christians permit the state to indoctrinate children in atheism and agnosticism? Is this carefully watching over the flock? Time, events, issues, and opportunities are slipping quickly by as souls slip into hell. Make no mistake; as sure as a righteous and Holy God exists, our judgment day is coming too.

This section explained why evangelicals are so ineffective, why we are losing our children to doctrines of devils, and why our society suffers. Being evangelical lite and accommodating to Satan’s wicked schemes is the reason why the Holy Spirit is grieved with us. It is, therefore, impossible to be collectively effective in our witness for Christ with so many immature believers and cowardly leaders. The Holy Spirit is not in union with those that grieve Him. This is the reason why the Church and our nation have not experienced another Great Awakening. Why should the Holy Spirit attract people to a system of shallow commitment, religious tokenism, and worldly compromise? The Holy
Spirit is not at all interested in growing existing fellowships that have such truncated views of spirituality or apathy toward God’s heart.

We will all give an account before God concerning our obedience to Christ and our compromise with godlessness.

*Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.*

Jesus the Christ - Matthew 7:21 (KJV)

We are so foolish to call twenty minutes of congregational singing “worshipping God,” while hundreds of thousands of children are indoctrinated in godlessness hours at a time with no choice to escape. How can we say we have freedom of religion or there is “separation of church and state” while the religion of godless humanism is forced on children? The religious freedom to influence children is the true test of religious liberty. Today hundreds of thousands of children are influenced five days a week and multiple hours per day in atheistic/agnostic secularism while we may involve only a tiny fraction of the same an hour or two a week in limited Christian spirituality. We have lost our most significant religious freedom and are too stupid to know it.

The apathy and complacency of foolish evangelicals is absolutely suffocating and deserves the full judgment of God.

*Today, 4,000 innocent precious lives of unborn babies were snuffed out... And 300,000 pulpits are silent.*

*Teenage suicide is the highest it has ever been And 300,000 pulpits are silent.*

*Rape has increased 700 percent in the last fifty years, and that takes into consideration the population growth... And 300,000 pulpits are silent.*

*What important matters are being dealt with in our churches?*

*The church bulletin says there will be a meeting to plan the church-wide supper. We are raising money to put a new floor cover on the kitchen. (The old one doesn’t match the new stove and refrigerator.)*

*We are organizing a softball team.*

- From Don Wildmon of the American Family Association

Our public education policies are indoctrinating whole classrooms in atheism while we plan for the next church-wide Super Bowl church party. Many of our young people know more about sports and actors than apologetics. Thousand of politically active atheists and
agnostics hit the streets to talk to their neighbors, while evangelicals claim their citizenship is only in heaven. In the meantime, our society grows more secularly decadent and anti-Christian. And 300,000 pulpits are silent.

**What should Bill and Irene do?**

Bill and Irene need to understand that when the Church has failed to meet a need that sometimes para-church organizations have stepped in to meet the challenges. Bill and Irene need to prayerfully and consistently support the works of God. This means that if their pastor and church fail to respond, then they should prayerfully seek out and support the ministries and organizations that do.

We will all be judged with what we did and did not do with what we had (Matthew 7:21, 25:14-46, James 2:20, 26, Revelation 20:13).

**Suggested Scripture Reading:**
Isaiah chapter 58, Amos, Acts 5, Hebrews, James

**Resources:**

**DVD:**
1) *Amazing Grace*  *(Free to youth pastors and ministers.)*  
   http://www.amazinggracemovie.com/

“Based on the true story of William Wilberforce (Ioan Gruffudd), *Amazing Grace* follows his courageous quest to pass a law to end the British slave trade and reform society. Along the way, Wilberforce meets intense opposition from members of Parliament but his minister, John Newton (Albert Finney), a reformed slave ship captain who penned the beloved hymn, “Amazing Grace,” urges him to put his faith into action and see the cause through.”

**Websites:**
1)  [www.patriotacademy.com](http://www.patriotacademy.com)  
   Sponsors a 5 day (August) Christian conservative leadership training program for students (ages 16-15) to engage our political process.
2)  [http://visiontoamerica.org](http://visiontoamerica.org)

**Books:**
1) *TRUTH UNDER FIRE*, John W. Whitehead  
   - A Call to Christian Thought and Action in All of Life  
   Crossway Books, 1300 Crescent Street, Wheaton, Illinois 60187

2) *already gone* – Why your kids will quit church and what you can do to stop it  
   Ken Ham & Britt Beemer with Todd Hillard  
   Master Books (www.masterbooks.net)

4) *Reason in the Balance*, Phillip E. Johnson
   – The Case Against NATURALISM in Science, Law & Education
   InterVarsity Press, Downers Grove, Illinois

5) The ACLU vs America – Exposing the Agenda to redefine Moral Values
   Alan Sears and Craig Osten,
   B&H Publishing Group, Nashville, Tennessee

6) *Truth & The New Kind of Christian*, R. Scott Smith
   Crossway Books, 1300 Crescent Street, Wheaton, Illinois 60187

7) *God’s Angry Side*, Stephen A. Bly
   Moody Press, Chicago

8) *This Was Your Life!*!, Rick Howard & Jamie Lash
   – Preparing to Meet God Face to Face.
   Chosen Books, P.O. Box 6287, Grand Rapids, MI 49516-6287

9) *City on a Hill*, Philip Graham Ryken
   - Reclaiming the Biblical Pattern for the Church in the 21st Century
   Moody, Publishers, Chicago

10) *DOWNFALL* - Secularization of a Christian Nation, Marty Pay & Hal Donaldson
    New Leaf Press

**Communications:**
**Testimony Time:** A source for Christian bumper stickers
P.O. Box 505, St. Ann, MO. 63074. Phone: 314-462-2109.
Email: bumpersticker@juno.com
Website: http://www.christianbumpersticker.org/

Samples: 1) Don’t Have Enough FAITH To Believe in Evolution

2) America was Born
   A Christian Nation
   President Woodrow Wilson

3) How can God Bless America
   When we kicked HIM Out of our Schools?

4) “To Suppose that the Eye…Could Have Been formed by Natural Selections, Seems, I Freely confess, Absurd in the Highest Degree”
   (Darwin)
5) Evolution – Door to Atheism

6) Our Godless Schools
   Produce Low Morals &
   Test Scores & High Pregnancy

7) America, Get Back To God
Chapter 9: Our Future Society

What do Americans take pride in - the flag, our neighborhood school, our way of life? It’s all this and more, but the American teacher holds a special place in all our hearts. We appreciate teachers that guide our children in the right direction, instilling confidence to climb the mountains of discovery. We appreciate their hard work to nurture in our children the courage to do the academic difficult and to play fair in teamwork.

However, there is another kind of teacher that is slowly coming into public focus. This second teacher understands the rewards of political power. This teacher understands very clearly that teachers’ benefits are determined via school board politics, state legislatures and Congress; and not at all the result of students’ performance. This teacher is a social engineer who believes that public policies politically driven are the means to our future. A brief survey shows these teachers are winning.

Did you ever wonder why a professional educational association, such as the National Education Association (NEA) claims to be, is against merit pay for teachers? Surely a real professional educational association would be serious in rewarding its most successful and creative teachers that develop innovative techniques designed to motivate and inspire learning. Not so for the NEA. The NEA’s primary agenda is politics. It’s not education. This is clearly reflected in who they reward – the UniServ Professionals.

The NEA has at least 1,500 UniServ professionals in the United States, with at least one in every congressional district in the nation. Their purpose is to organize the local teachers, parents, and “friends of education” to support candidates from the local school board to the president of the United States, as well as liberal-left-leaning issues the NEA favors. These teachers and ex-teachers constitute what has been called the largest field army of paid political organizers and lobbyists in the United States, dwarfing the forces of the Republican and Democratic national committees combined.

In 1990, while the average teacher salary was $35,000, UniServe professionals earned anywhere from $50,000 to $75,000. In 1993-94, UniServ directors were paid $60,000 to $100,000. Peter Brimelow and Leslie Spencer, authors of the Forbes article: “The National Extortion Association?” (June 7, 1993) stated, “Not surprisingly, many teachers elected to union posts eventually join the permanent staff.” Many Washington staffers earn six figures; secretaries make $40,000. Fringe benefits that are said to be the most generous in Washington, are worth another 35 percent. Obviously this is the gifted and talented the NEA prefers to reward, not the innovative classroom teacher. Should we wonder why the gifted and talented teachers leave education for politics?

The NEA is the largest union in the United States. It has 3.2 million members with affiliate organizations in every state and influence in more than 14,000 communities in the United States. Its budget was over 307 million dollars for the 2006-2007 fiscal year.

“Beginning in 1964 the NEA had sponsored Teacher-in-Politics weekend training workshops all across the country. The purpose of these ‘political clinics’ was to teach
teachers how to win school-bond elections in their local communities, elect pro-NEA candidates to school boards and local office, and mobilize local groups to support NEA objectives. As long as the local school boards were in the hands of those friendly to the NEA, the teachers would get their way.”¹ This also explains the direction of U.S. politics at the local, state, and national levels as well.

A review of a few highlights over the years show the profound progress the NEA has made to achieve its political goals.

In 1973, NEA President Catherine Barrett, reported, “In 1972, teacher political activity reached its highest level…teachers played an active role in electing 30 percent of the House of Representatives and 40 percent of the 33 candidates elected in the Senate. NEA-PAC became a reality last September. It supported 32 candidates. Twenty-six of them won.”² This was an 81 percent win rate for the NEA-Political Action Committee’s (NEA-PAC) first time efforts.

“In the 1976 election NEA-PAC [National Education Association – Political Action Committee] scored an 83 percent win record in congress. Of the 323 House candidates it endorsed, 272 won; and of the 26 Senate candidates it endorsed, 19 won.”³

“In the 1978 elections, NEA-PAC spent $335,347 helping its candidates and achieved a 77 percent win record, with 197 House candidates winning out of 247 endorsed by NEA, and 13 Senate candidates winning out of 24 endorsed by NEA.”⁴

“From 1972 to early 1982 NEA-PAC had supported 1,413 candidates for federal office and achieved a 78 percent win record.”⁵

In November 1982, Willard McGuire, NEA president, told NEA members, “Get out and vote on November 2nd. More and more often critical elections are being decided by margins of only one or two votes per precinct. With 4,000 to 6,000 NEA members in each of the nation’s 35 congressional districts, together we can make the difference in many vital races on Election Day.”⁶

And what a difference they made. In 1982 the “NEA-PAC had endorsed 302 House candidates of which 224 won, and it had endorsed 32 Senate candidates of which 20 won, thus achieving a 73 percent win average.”⁷

“NEA-PAC has compiled one of the most impressive fundraising and win/loss records of any major organization in American politics. Since its formation in 1972, almost 80% of federal candidates endorsed and supported by NEA-PAC have subsequently been elected to national office.”⁸

“In 1990 CTA-endorsed candidates won in 95 percent of their primary races with the highest winning percentages in state legislative and Congressional races. CTA-endorsed candidates for state senate won 16 of 16 races, and Assembly candidates won 52 of 53.
In the 1990 June primary 83 percent of ballot measures endorsed and supported by CTA were approved.” (CTA Action, 1990)\textsuperscript{10}

Does it bother anyone that the very liberal godless favoring CTA’s backed candidates won at the 98 to almost 100 percent level?

“The CTA [California Teachers Association – a state affiliate of the NEA] is widely regarded as the most powerful and biggest spending lobby in California. Insofar as cash contributions foster influence, this conclusion is obvious. According to the California Secretary of State, the CTA spent $2,125,472 lobbying in the first quarter of 1993, four times the amount spent by the next highest special interest group, the California Medical Association. In 1991-92, the CTA spent over $7.4 million on political campaigns and lobbying. Legislators who support the NEA/CTA positions are typically rewarded with contributions in the next election cycle.”\textsuperscript{9}

“CTA opponents as well as supporters agree that legislation opposed by the CTA is very unlikely to be enacted.”\textsuperscript{11}

“The teachers union can raise money more easily than its political rivals, because its overhead is already in place. Political Action Committee (PAC) money is usually collected right along with dues, often automatically deducted from salaries unless members specifically opt out.\textsuperscript{[A]} And election law allows the union to spend without limit on communicating with its members, who are quite numerous enough to make a difference in close elections.”\textsuperscript{12}

These teachers also go into politics. “In 1990, 40% of Alabama’s legislature were teachers, ex-teachers or teachers’ spouses.”\textsuperscript{13} “In Michigan there are more teachers or former teachers in the state legislature than there are lawyers.”\textsuperscript{14}

“Significantly, NEA members have been the single largest block of delegates at every Democratic convention since 1980.”\textsuperscript{15}

The National Education Association is profoundly adept and very professional at slanting any public issue in its favor. Most politicians are intimidated by the NEA.

“Tom Campbell, a prominent candidate for the California state senate who had supported the school choice initiative, changed his position after the CTA threatened to run one of its officers and mount an all-out campaign against him. After CTA announced that it would ‘saturate the area’ with money and campaign workers (Los Angeles Times, 1993), Campbell, a Stanford University law professor, let it be known that after reading the initiative more carefully, he had decided to oppose it.”\textsuperscript{16}

Immediately after Clinton’s inauguration, the NEA demanded and got the instant firing of

\textsuperscript{[A]} Opting out is not easy. See YouTube – Teachers Unions Abuse Non-Union Teachers Pay Checks at: http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TR9LLjflLv3M
Tom Tancredo, Bush’s Education Department’s Denver regional representative, in revenge for his outspoken public support for educational choice in Colorado.

Peter Schrag’s article: “California’s mighty 800-pound gorillas,” stated at least three significant points about government unions:

- The U.S. Bureau of Labor Statistics reported that government employees have a larger favorable pay gap between them and their counterparts in the private industry.

- Public employees in this state wield extraordinary power, both in the Legislature and with local governments and school boards.

- They have the power to lobby and to make unlimited contributions to the same politicians who set their pay and working conditions; and they have collective bargaining.

“How did the NEA achieve such extraordinary economic and political power? It’s the result of a sort of institutional accident…. The teachers union is in an exceptional position: the near-monopoly supplier to a government-enforced monopoly consumer.”

In other words, the government, via forced enrollment, limits citizens to public schools. Any unionized workforce associated with such an arrangement has more favors, benefits, and political power than any other corresponding division of labor in the private sector. Many Americans do not realize that the NEA is the godless socialistic political power driving element in American politics and culture. To diminish the NEA political power machine Americans need to allow for full educational choice that includes private independent schools. Such are like small business that have no ties to the NEA.

The NEA has had such a favored protected status and has demanded and received increases in educational spending for so long that we now see a new phenomenon in educational opportunities. Most (80 to 90 percent) private and independent schools operate at half the expense per student or less than government schools and produce better academic results despite their diminished funding. This clearly spells out an effective agenda to oppose the NEA and explains why the NEA so vigorously opposes school choice. The NEA cannot afford to lose in any area where the voting public might become educated about the benefits of school choice that included private and independent schools. The protected jobs of mediocre teachers and the NEA’s political power machine could be jeopardized.

In an article titled: “The Crisis in Education Is Our Problem,” Michael R. Losey, President and CEO, Society for Human Resource Management, reported that “About 80 percent of all applicants screened nationally by Motorola, Inc. failed an entry-level exam requiring seventh grade English and fifth grade math.” He also reported that “Illiteracy costs American business billions of dollars a year in reduced productivity, workplace accidents, absenteeism, poor product quality and errors.” These added expenses are simply passed on to the consumer. In February 2011, the US Secretary of Labor, Hilda
L. Solis, was confronted with small-business owners, university officials, and work development leaders that said “many potential [American] workers are extremely unqualified.” Those that continue to vote to give government schools increased funds without competition and competitive pressure for improvement are indirectly also voting to pay more for goods and services from businesses that are forced to educate its workforce. American workers shouldn’t wonder why their jobs go overseas to companies willing to cut these expenses. On international tests, American students lag so far behind we are closer to the bottom than the top. This means American companies will have problems competing. Americans should not wonder why our unemployment rises while aliens and foreign countries are given skilled jobs.

The warning of foreign dominance over God’s people was given years ago. “And if you reject my decrees and abhor my laws and fail to carry out all my commands and so violate my covenant, then … those who hate you will rule over you…” (Leviticus 26:15, 17b NIV).

What are the economical consequences for any state primarily controlled by the NEA? In 2009, California lawmakers and the governor labored to close $60 billion in deficits by using budget tricks, cutting programs and raising taxes. As of January 2010, California is still facing a $20 billion shortfall. Jack Kyser, chief economist with the Los Angeles County Economic Development Corp., “cautioned that the threat of the state defaulting on its billions of dollars in bond debt has become a distinct possibility.” Yet with all this, the Democrat-controlled (NEA backed) legislature sharply criticized the governor for the spending cuts and the public employee unions (NEA) have been challenging furloughs in court. Anyone holding California bonds should also know that the California Constitution mandates that tax-revenue must go to pay education expenses first, then after this other debts. One should give these teachers credit for planning ahead and looking out for themselves first, over and above the interests of all other citizens.

In 1993, the Yes on 174 School Choice people predicted that California’s budget shortfall would occur if the school choice proposition 174 failed. They projected by saying, “Opponents [NEA] have no plan to educate 1.8 million new students in the next eight years. New public school construction is not efficient or fast enough to meet needs. Taxpayers will spend over $50 billion per year on schools.” Considering there are thousands of empty Sunday school classrooms Monday through Friday all over California, California voters brought the deficit upon themselves when they followed the NEA’s propaganda and voted against Proposition 174 – the School Choice Initiative.

Voters need to understand that as the NEA’s state affiliates demands more and more from each state’s general fund for themselves, then less resources and options will be available for other government services. These services could be anything from senior health care services and assisted living to fire and police protection. One police officer reported to me how the crime in his city will go up simply because his city, due to budget constraints, had to eliminate its aero-surveillance division. This aero-surveillance division greatly increased the effectiveness of officers on the ground and criminals knew it. The criminals also know their city has eliminated it.
“According to a study by John Berthoud of the Alexis de Tocqueville Institute, if every item of the NEA’s legislative agenda was enacted by law, federal spending would increase by $702 billion per year, resulting in additional taxes of $10,554 for a family of four.”

“Wherever we go,” says James Dale Davidson, chairman of the National Taxpayers Union, which has been conducting a state-by-state battle for a federal balanced budget amendment, “the NEA is our main opponent.”

In a recent (September 27, 2010) editorial “Required Viewing” by Marta H. Mossburg of the Baltimore Sun said that the “teachers' unions outspend every other special interest to achieve their political goals. Don’t forget, these are your tax dollars working against you, via teacher union dues.

NEA’s Anti-Christian Ideology and Actions

NEA-PAC’s political orientation has been described as “reflective of the left wing of the Democratic Party.” There is no doubt that the NEA has become militantly politicized and is now “the most active and powerful advocates of social agendas of the radical left.” The NEA gives money to the National Organization for Women (who support abortion), pro-homosexual advocacy groups (who teach children to accept these sins as normal), and People for the American Way (PAW), which attack conservative Christians. What organizations do Christians support to oppose all this?

“In a 1984 CTA [California Teachers Association – NEA affiliate] pamphlet entitled ‘Guidelines for Academic Freedom in Public Schools,’ the CTA Tenure and Academic Freedom Committee expressed opposition to the ‘New Right’ as follows: Who dare take on religion, free enterprise, patriotism, and motherhood? We do, and we must! When this extreme statement is compared with the CTA-sponsored workshop, Extremist Attacks on Academic Freedom, held at Madera High School in 1993, it also accurately encapsulated CTA’s policy.” Today, CTA has become even more decadent. Now they promote homosexuality on children. Please understand that academic freedom for these teachers mean that they are free to teach their humanistic immorality without opposition from anyone. Anyone who boasts that they will oppose [traditional] religion, free enterprise, patriotism, and motherhood and then claim their opponents are “extremists” obviously are publicly admitting to being extreme themselves. Americans should have the freedom to choose these schools if they want it. It shouldn’t be forced on their children. These are the politically active NEA teachers that Americans need to wake up to and oppose. Not exactly the American apple pie variety. America will continually change for the worse until we implement a school choice policy with attractive Christian schools options.

Another Prophet

In 1984 with Samuel L. Blumenfeld’s first printing of NEA: Trojan Horse in American Education, Mr. Blumenfeld tried to warn Americans that the NEA, under the guise of improving education, has the goal of converting America into a socialist society. Are we listening?

“CTA defines extreme groups and individuals as those ‘who attempt to set moral judgments for everyone,’ and proceeds to list six ‘far right’ organizations active in
California. They are: Citizens for Excellence in Education, American Family Association, Traditional Values Coalition, Concerned Women for America, American Coalition For Traditional Values, and Focus On The Family. These organizations are operated and promoted by evangelicals. So as the NEA thinks of these organizations they also think of evangelicals. Why should the NEA have the freedom to set “moral judgments” over and above everyone else? CTA claims that the policies of such ‘far right’ groups are detrimental to public education and urges all CTA chapters to ‘actively oppose’ them.”32 Now imagine the classroom influence these godless teachers are having on hundreds of thousands of children. And we think government schools are values neutral? How stupid can we be?

So what is the moral judgment now given in schools?

Fox News: Culture War Over Boulder High School Panel that Encourage Students to Have Sex, Break the Law, Thursday, June 14, 2007 by Bill O’Reilly

The drug and sex scandal at Boulder High School, Boulder, Colorado, is now out in the open and that’s a good thing. On April 10, school officials allowed far left adults in a school rally to encourage students to use drugs, break the law, and engage in questionable sexual activity. Go to http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,282334,00.html to learn the graphic details the kids were subjected to.

Unfortunately, Boulder, Colorado is not the only place immorality is taught to children as Michael Ramirez’s political cartoon illustrated.
“Since CTA [California Teachers Association] is an NEA affiliate, it supports NEA resolutions and policies and affirms this in its Statement of Mission, Goals, and Objectives. “The NEA, and by extension the CTA, supports affirmative action quotas, gay and lesbian rights, the dispensing of condoms in public schools, abortion-on-demand, in-school care for teen-age parents, a nuclear freeze, drafting women in the military, gun control, socialized medicine, and statehood for Washington DC. None of these policies have ever been submitted to rank and file CTA members for their vote. CTA by-laws do not require it.”

The NEA is even bigger, more centralized, more politically influential and in key respects nastier than is realized. “Deborah Hawley, campaign consultant for the narrowly defeated pro-school choice candidate says her office received reports that the Wisconsin state NEA affiliate ordered teachers to write anti-[school] choice postcards to a minimum number of acquaintances – and to bring the postcards into union headquarters, so that their compliance could be checked. (The NEA affiliate denies it.) The Springfield, Virginia, based National right to Work Committee is able to provide a thick file of local newspapers clippings on teacher union harassment, vandalism and violence.”

“Even the *Washington Post* has editorialized three times recently against teachers refusing to write college recommendations unless the students and their families supported aspects of the union’s agenda.”

Now in 2011, educators from Washington D.C. to Pennsylvania are accused of tampering with student tests to boost their scores. (See Huffington Post 7/11/2011 and 7/12/2011 reports.) Did you ever wonder about the kind of civic lessons or influence in “responsible” citizenship these teachers are passing on to their students? How free are we? With the NEA political success rate, how secure will our future freedoms be?

“Out of approximately 9,000 delegates to the NEA conventions, about 20 have attended recent meetings of the Republican Educators Caucus (REC). In view of the fact that membership is open to any Republican who is an NEA member, and about 35% of NEA members identify themselves as Republicans, active caucus membership is not very impressive.”

The reason for this is clear. “The REC is essentially a paper organization, with little if any influence in either the NEA or the Republican party. By providing minimal if not token representation to Republicans, the NEA is able to claim that its political activities are ‘bipartisan.’”

These are the social engineers that are driving American politics toward socialistic policies, larger government controls, and godless cultural philosophies. They are committed to bringing social changes to culture and society that many Americans despise. These teachers are the leaders in classroom psychological abuses and secular religious indoctrination. Their hatred toward and intolerance of Christianity and the promotion of humanism are well documented in several books:

1) *Children at Risk – The Battle for the Hearts and Minds of Our Kids*, by Dr. James Dobson and Gary L. Bauer;
2) *Child Abuse in the Classroom*, edited by Phyllis Schlafly;
3) *Inside American Education – The Decline, the Deception, the Dogmas*, by Thomas Sowell;
4) *The De-Valuing of America – The Fight for Our Culture and Our Children*, by William J. Bennett;
5) *Mind Siege*, by Tim LaHaye and David Noebel,
6) *Clergy in the Classroom – The Religion of Secular Humanism*, by David A. Noebel
7) *SECULAR SABOTAGE – How Liberals are Destroying Religion and Culture in America*, by Bill Donohue
8) *Persecution – How Liberals are Waging War against Christianity*, by David Limbaugh

These are just a random sampling of the many books that addressed the secular religious indoctrination in our “public” schools. Amazingly, many evangelical pastors are so inwardly focused on their own agenda they have no idea of the extent of this humanistic abuse on American children in our “public” schools. These are the watchmen in our time that have failed to sound the warning (Ezekiel 33:6-8)! And God’s judgment will follow.

Dr. James Dobson, founder of Focus on the Family, gave his radio listeners the following advice on March 28, 2002: “In the state of California, if I had a child there, I wouldn’t put the youngster in a public school…. I think it’s time to get our kids out…."

Jesus Christ clearly expressed: *But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea* (Matthew 18:6 - KJV). Have Christians given it any thought to just how “un-Christ-like” and “non-nurturing” Christ sounds in this passage? Jesus is clearly saying that such a man should die.

Obviously, Christ did not hang a millstone around anyone’s neck nor throw him overboard to drown. But Christ did express a passionate attitude on an issue we are to adopt. We have many social and political options left in this country to effect change. If we were as passionate as Christ, the changes would have been implemented already.

Consequently, many evangelicals are mistaken in their perception of Christ. We can conclude then that Christ is not always as gracious as evangelicals mistakenly believe He is. The reason should be obvious now. To cause a child to doubt God’s existence is also to cause a child to miss the salvation provided by Christ. This doubt in God also causes doubt in the foundation of moral values. Such a child has the real potential of becoming a threat to himself and others as we have already addressed in chapter 5 - Values in Vacuum in Vain. Such a child’s soul is in eternal danger of hell. How can Christians remain apathetic and indifferent to the heart of Christ with this growing social problem that is driven by the NEA’s humanistic ideology and politics of VOID? Could it be that too many evangelicals don’t know Christ or His passion? How can we ever have God’s blessings on us individually or as a nation while we remain ignorant and indifferent to God’s heart on these issues? Ignorantly we are perishing in a growing secular society just as Hosea the prophet said would happen (Hosea 4:6).
We could just as well ask the question, How can God bless German “Christians” who remained indifferent to the suffering Jews during the Nazi regime? No, many didn’t participate directly in the crimes against the Jews, they simply avoided any disturbance to their personal peace and affluence by remaining silent instead of challenging the state’s policy. German “Christians” even had scriptural reasons very similar to today’s evangelicals to justify their indifference to ungodly politics. “The powers that be are ordained of God.” This brief reference to Paul’s thesis on the role of government in Romans 13 overlooks the type of government Paul was inspired to write about – a government that did good and not evil. “For rulers hold no terror for those who do right, but for those who do wrong (Romans 13:3 - 4). The next argument evangelicals hide behind is, “We should never put our trust in political solutions.” This is an absolutely true statement and explains why Christians, with their full trust in God, should remain diligent against wicked political schemes and not allow the wicked to rule (Proverbs 29:2). To allow the wicked to rule untested is an expression of trust in their political solutions. Therefore Christians should never remain apathetic. Solomon explained clearly the basis for legitimate governments.

“It is an abomination to kings to commit wickedness: for the throne is established by righteousness.” Proverbs 16:12 (KJV)

The throne is established by righteousness when righteous people are involved in government. They should never leave politics to the ungodly. If they do, then don’t be surprised with wicked and corrupt policy decisions.

Jesus also taught that “the gates of hell would not prevail against his Church” (Matthew 16:18). The gates of hell only serve a defensive purpose. Therefore, Jesus clearly taught that should His Church attack the city of Satan to liberate the inhabitants, then “the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.” In other words, the gates would crumble and Satan’s citizens would be liberated. This is the Great Awakening Christians should be praying for.

Unfortunately, much of the Church of Jesus Christ is asleep with its own programs and limited spirituality. While no minister will ever instruct his congregation to remain silent and avoid being a Christian witness because of the potential for Christian offense in our anti-god secular culture, there are multiple ministers that will discourage any righteous social or political action because of its potential for offense in their communities and churches. Many times their apologetic is slanted as though hateful confrontation and disrespectful debate are the only options of doing politics. These are straw men arguments and obviously such methods are not God pleasing. But such methods are not the only means of doing politics or being involved in informing a community. One could just as well argue against preaching because of the bad ministerial examples of legitimate offenses and the charlatans that have taken advantage of the hurting.

The question remains: Will evangelicals ever wake up and see the heart of Christ toward children that are being taken prisoners by a soul-damning and physical-life treating philosophy of VOID that has been our public policy in government education for
decades? When will the Church wakeup and liberate them? When will the Church of Jesus Christ attack the city of Satan? The children and their parents should have a choice if they want to remain in the city of Satan or be free. Many unchurched families would leave government schools for private Christian schools, if only the Church would wake up and fight for school choice. What an opportunity for Christian evangelism awaits us!

Despite one popular, but mistaken minister’s comments that God does not call the church to influence the culture by promoting legislation and court rulings that advance a Scripture point of view. In contrast, God really does call the Church for such action. This is what it means to be the representative of Christ on earth and oppose the works of the devil (1 John 3:8). If we are not representing the “Scripture point of view” then by default we are permitting an unscriptural point of view to rule. What a contradiction to preach that Christians are expected to follow Scriptures in their private lives, but not their public lives!!! What does it mean to be a Christian if one doesn’t live it out in all of life? This means the Church has no other choice but to advance a Scripture point of view. To apathetically allow non-scriptural political views deserves God’s judgment. The Church needs to wake up, repent, and liberate children that are Satan’s prisoners in our humanistic indoctrination centers we call “public” schools. Why should the righteous submit total government control of anything to the wicked? In many cases the public has no input on curriculum development or teacher selection. Any response the public has is merely a token because of massive bureaucratic government controls and the power of the NEA. We have government schools, not public schools. The controls are not open to the taxpaying public. School board elections are influenced by the NEA more than the public perceives.

Until the Church wakes up and fights hard for real school choice and better schools, our future and our children’s future is not bright. Americans can continue to expect the erosion of traditional values, diminished Christian beliefs, continued political pressure to accept the religious’ left death-styles, the redefinition of the family, gay marriage, the continued indoctrination in humanism - atheism and agnosticism, the continued loss of personal liberties, increased taxes, socialization, and more stories of death in our schools and communities as the NEA exercises its godless political muscles. Values in a vacuum are vain. This is our future – a secular godless and decadent society without meaning or purpose followed by expensive tax-heavy burdens and socialistic policies to try and fix the social problems we created. The NEA has aggressively promoted such while evangelicals have apathetically failed to fight for school choice. None of this is God’s desire or will on earth. We brought this upon ourselves. We are not the religiously free people we think we are. We are under atheistic state controls now and it’s growing. Until we repent and change our ways it will get worse.

9After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. 10Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Jesus the Christ – Matthew 6:9-10 (KJV)

The principles of all genuine liberty, and of wise laws and administrations are to be drawn from the Bible and sustained by its authority. The man therefore who weakens or
destroys the divine authority of that book may be accessory to all the public disorders which society is doomed to suffer.  Noah Webster (An American Founding Father)

If the public could ever learn how they are being manipulated for votes that favor the National Education Association’s special interest at the expense of their children and their wallets and purses, a turning point in our social crisis of decadence and new opportunities for education and evangelism could begin. The Church is the only entity that could successfully oppose the NEA’s message and awaken the voter. The Church is the only major entity with legitimate reasons to oppose the NEA. But Christians must wake up and repent first.

The Ripple Effect

- As ministers preach, Christians become.
- As Christians become, Christians influence.
- As Christians influence, citizens permit.
- As citizens permit, teachers teach.
- As teachers teach, children think.
- As children think, children behave.
- As children behave, society becomes.

As children think so society becomes.

“For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he.”
Solomon - Proverbs 23:7a (KJV)

More Prophets

Here again we see the great evangelical disaster—the failure of the evangelical leadership to take a stand really on anything that would stand decisively over against the relativistic moral slide of our culture—the failure to take a stand on anything that would ‘rock the boat’ concerning our personal projects and acceptance. And now when our culture is all but lost, can we expect anything but further disaster in the form of a complete moral breakdown and the rise of a new humanistic authoritarianism if we do not take a stand?38

Francis A Schaeffer in The Great Evangelical Disaster

If we and our posterity...live always in the fear of God and shall respect His Commandments...we may have the highest hopes of the future fortunes of our country.... But if we...neglect religious instruction and authority; violate the rules of eternal justice, trifle with the injunctions of morality, and recklessly destroy the constitution which holds us together, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe may overwhelm us and bury all our glory in profound obscurity.”

Daniel Webster, Address to the New York Historical Society, 185239
Those living in the early 60s, when the U.S. Supreme Court outlawed school prayer and then began systematically removing any godly reference from our schools, saw just how quickly Mr. Webster’s prediction was fulfilled. Those living during these changes can now tell just how suddenly catastrophic social and political corruption has swept into our nation.

Tim LaHaye and David Noebel, authors of Mind-Seige, admitted that “History shows that it was the pastors of early America who rallied the people to throw off the tyranny of England. It also shows that ministers of the gospel later rallied the people to oppose slavery and bring freedom to a whole race. Today our country is faced with the most cruel enemy it has ever confronted, the religious forces of Secular Humanism. Ministers of the gospel and their constituencies make up the only group in this country with sufficient followers to vote the rascals out of office and to reform the courts, media, entertainment, and education.”

Pastors may ignore this conflict now. Unfortunately, this godless conflict will not ignore them.

What should Bill and Irene do?

Bill and Irene need to realize that they are losing their rights as citizens to a very powerful special godless interest group – the National Education Association. Until the NEA is stopped, Bill and Irene will continue to see new government socialistic policies implemented with increased taxation to pay for it all. They will also see new levels of liberal judicial tyranny, appointees of the NEA’s political favorites, cancelling the legal votes of the majority, again making Bill and Irene second-class citizens. The NEA’s political strength enables a humanistic minority to command and control the majority via the courts and legislation. The NEA is getting away with all this, because we are ignorant of God’s knowledge just as Hosea said (Hosea 4:6).

If we are apathetic to children without choice to a godly education, why should God care if we lose our political, economical, and lifestyle freedoms to the same godless political powers?

How can the NEA be resisted?

Implement a real school choice policy that includes private schools of all flavors that desire to participate in a program of student-scholarship vouchers and/or tuition tax-credits. These schools will have teachers with no obligation or need to join a union. Such independent schools will have the economic potential to reward teachers that want to teach. There are many teachers who desire to start and control their own schools. Principals also want to terminate bad teachers, but are inhibited by the NEA. Such a school choice policy change will reward teachers that teach, diminish the bureaucratic waste in government, and improve education via competition in school choice as each strive to better serve and nurture students’ needs and compete for parental favor. As union-dominated teachers are replaced by non-union teachers the political machinery of
the NEA will diminished. A school choice policy will enable unemployed and underemployed degreed professions to replace bad teachers. This will return voting power to the average American citizen as the most politically powerful special interest (NEA) is disenfranchised and defunded. This in turn will free up funds for other governmental spending needs, but most importantly, enable religious freedom again.

Will this be easy? Not at all! The NEA has been politically winning at the 70 percent rate and above for years, so their cronies are in every level of government with lots of friends in the media. If the American public should ever wake up and see that our social, economic, judicial, and political mess is because of NEA’s godless policies, then possibly Americans for the first time will vote against the NEA’s propaganda. Should this day ever arrive, these freedom-loving independent voters will also have the power to see judicial tyrants reviewed, recalled, and legislation implemented to provide a check against the judiciary. A state constitutional revision could add significant protection for independent schools against added state controls alone. Unless this happens, Christian schools without vouchers can expect the politically power-growing and God-hating NEA to add government limitations and controls on them anyway. It’s only a matter of time. It could come via the legislature or the courts. Robert Bork admitted, “[T]he only practical way of reining in the Supreme Court, is a constitutional amendment making its rulings subject to democratic review. As matters now stand, the Court’s assumption of complete governing power is intolerable, and yet, absent a constitutional amendment, we have no way of refusing to tolerate it.”41 It’s time Americans recognize our government is now without checks and balances because of the tyranny of our courts and a very politically powerful special interest group – the National Education Association.

NOTE: The public schools have had years of opportunities to reform but have failed the students and the taxpayers. Multiple references at the end of this chapter and Chapter 4 explain in detail why the NEA is to be blamed. A charter school provides a measure of added controls for parents, but does nothing to remove the NEA’s political power grab. Before a charter school can exist, it must seek permission from the local union-dominated political representatives first. Parents are encouraged to not waste energy with school boards, charter schools, or PTA, but to fight aggressively for real school choice. Real school choice includes all forms of schools. Some communities are becoming so dominated by NEA union politics that newly elected school board members with traditional values are immediately put in a voter recall fight or voted off in the next election. If this problem hasn’t come to your community yet, it will. We must fight for freedom for all. Even if Christians are elected to school boards or start a charter school, the open expression of Christian values are still restricted and/or prohibited in such schools. Free-Enterprise American Independent Schools will have no such restriction. In our present economic crisis, this may be evangelicals’ last chance to capture the public attention of the NEA’s political power grab and exorbitant government expenditures.

Bill and Irene should not be fooled by temporary political victories. The NEA is a significant political organization with years of experience of manipulating voters. They have the potential to come back and win again. Bill and Irene need to help adopt a public policy that will remove political power from the NEA. A school choice policy could do
this as public school teachers become private independent school teachers. It is also now time to defund the Department of Education because of the NEA’s influence.

Christian businesses must also be encouraged to provide student scholarships to help remove students from the godless government school system. Expect NEA members to complain against the charitable businessmen who provide such scholarships for such needy children. Some teachers have already complained. This shows clearly who they really care for - themselves.

*The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing.*

---

*I have sworn upon the altar of God eternal hostility against every form of tyranny over the mind of man.*

---

**More Prophets**

*It is the common fate of the indolent [lazy] to see their rights become a prey to the active. The condition upon which God hath given liberty to man is eternal vigilance; which condition if he break, servitude is at once the consequence of his crime and the punishment of his guilt.*  

John Philpot Curran: Speech upon the Right of Election, 1790.

---

Bill and Irene need to see and share *The Cartel* documentary DVD below and share this message with anyone that think we have religious freedom in this country. Religious freedom includes the inculcating and protection of those traditional religious convictions parents desire for their children. This kind of freedom is quickly slipping away in America!

*God who gave us life gave us liberty. And can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of the Gift of God?*  

Thomas Jefferson

---

**Resources:**

**Website:**

1) http://www.teachersunionexposed.com

**DVD:**


Bowden Media, 156 Second St., Hoboken, NJ 07030

Article:
1) “The National Extortion Association?” by Peter Brimelow and Leslie Spencer
   *Forbes* – June 7, 1993

2) “Why Teachers Don’t Teach,” – How teacher unions are wrecking our schools.
   *U.S. News & World Report*, February 26, 1996, Volume 120, No. 8

Books:
Note: See resources at the end of Chapter 10 for a list of organizations, websites, and books on school choice.

1) *The Day They PADLOCKED the Church*, H. Edward Rowe
   Published by: Huntington House, Inc., 1200 N. Market Street, Suite G, Shreveport, Louisiana 71107 (318) 222-1350
   Rowe’s book shows the legal and political power of the Nebraska teachers union and
   how ministers and Christian men came together to successfully oppose the injustice of
   their system. Note: This is the Faith Baptist Church that William Bentley Ball
   referred to in his article: “False Assumptions on Voucher Programs and the Law,”
   **Ball’s article is a must read for all those concerned with state controls of private, independent schools.**

2) *NEA: The Grab for Power* – A Chronology of the National Education Association,
   Dennis Cuddy, Ph.D.
   Hearthstone Publishing, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma

3) *NEA – Trojan Horse in American Education*, Samuel L. Blumenfeld
   Published by: The Paradigm Company, Boise, Idaho
   The Paradigm editors comment: “If you read but one book on education in your
   lifetime, this is the one to read, for you must know what the NEA has in store for
   America if this nation is to survive in freedom.”

4) *Grading the NEA* – WHAT EVERY TEACHER NEEDS TO KNOW ABOUT THE
   NATIONAL EDUCATION ASSOCIATION, Perry L. Glanzer, Ph.D &
   Travis R. Pardo. See Focus on the Family

5) *Who’s Ruining Our Schools?* - The Case Against The NEA Teacher Union,
   Dan C. Alexander, Jr., Published by Save Our Schools Research and Education
   Foundation, 655 Fifth St. N.W., Suite 310, Washington, D.C. 20005

6) *Politics Markets & America’s Schools*, John E. Chub & Terry M. Moe
   The Brookings Institute, Washington, D.C. [This is a scholarly read with
   Evidence that our present system of union-dominated education is failing
   children.]
7) *Cheating Our Kids* - How Politics and Greed Ruin Education, Joe Williams  
Publisher: palgrave macmillian

8) *The Case for School Choice* by David R. Henderson  
Hoover Institute, 434 Galvez Mall, Stanford University, Sanford, California 94305-6010. Phone: 650-723-1754, http://www.hoover.org  

A sample read can be found by googling *The Case for School Choice* or at URL:  

Note 1: This essay raises the fear that anything the government funds will eventually bring government controls, however it also shows a proposed constitutional amendment that could limit such controls.  
Note 2: There is also a book with this title by David R. Henderson.

**Organizations:**

1) American Family Association, Rev. Donald Wildmon  
www.afa.net

2) Campaign for Children and Families  
PO Box 511, Sacramento, Ca., 95812  

3) Concerned Women For America, Beverly Lahaye  
(202) 488-7000  
www.cwfa.org  
1015 Fifteenth St. N.W., Suite 1100  
Washington, D.C. 20005

4) DONE WAITING  
http://donewaiting.org

5) Eagle Forum, Phyllis Schiafly  
(202) 544-0353  
www.eagleforum.org  
316 Pennsylvania Ave SE, Suite 203  
Washington, D.C. 20003  
Email: Colleen@eagleforum.org, Suzanne@eagleforum.org
6) Focus On The Family Action’s CitizenLink,  866-655-4545
www.citizenlink.org
8655 Explorer Driver, Colorado Springs, Colorado  80920

7) Rescue Your Child
www.rescUEyourchild.com

8) The Independence Institute: Colorado’s Free Market Think Tank
www.i2i.org  Click on “policy centers”

9) Traditional Values Coalition,  (202) 547-8570
www.traditionalvalues.org
Mail@traditionalvalues.org
139 “C” Street, SE                      100 S. Anaheim Blvd., Suite 350
Washington, D.C. 20003                  Anaheim, California   92805
Chapter 10: Options and Strategies

At this point the reader may have some remaining questions: 1) How can we effectively oppose liberal judges who through creative interpretations make new laws and legalize new decadent lifestyles? 2) How is this legal problem related to the school problem already mentioned? and 3) How can Christians be most effective in reversing the loss of liberties and the decadent trend we are witnessing in our society?

Let’s start with the last two questions first. We did not inherit this problem over night. It developed over time via godless secularism sown into American youth in our schools for decades prior. Why shouldn’t we now have secular godless judges that challenge our liberties? The reform of our education system via attractive schools of choice with meaningful apologetics is our solution. Instead of getting into a political fight over what education reform should look like, why not simply develop a true school choice public policy and let Americans form their own independent and local-controlled schools. Why should atheistic-agnostic schools be the only choice? We need to provide alternative choices to education that is competitive with the present model. This can only happen when private schools are permitted to compete with the government schools. Forcing and limiting students to government humanistic schools should always be recognized as a basic problem to personal liberty. We shouldn’t be surprised that this problem of liberty has now expanded via the courts. We need to focus on the needs of children, not existing institutions that are failing them. Our present social trend could be reversed via a public policy of true school choice with churches, Christian businesses, and educators willing to engage the culture and offer what the public wants—superior educational services with multiple options.

Besides the schools, judges do have a profound effect on law and customs. Robert H Bork’s *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline* and Max Boot’s *Out of Order – Arrogance, Corruption, and Incompetence on the Bench*, do an excellent job explaining judicial abuses. Therefore, they will not be repeated here. The reader should visit his or her local library.

However, Bork tells a story about Judge Martin Manton that needs to be repeated. Judge Manton once sat on the Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit, and who also came very close to being nominated for the U. S. Supreme Court. “When it became known that Manton took bribes from parties appearing before him, he claimed innocence on the interesting ground that he took bribes from both sides, decided the case on the merits, and then returned the money to the losing party.”¹ [Should we also be surprised when a godless public bribes for “justice”?] Bork also mentioned that “[T]here have been several cases of venal federal judges in recent years. One of them, removed from office by conviction on a bill of impeachment, promptly ran for Congress, and, then voters’ concern for judicial integrity being what it is, won.”² Bork later explained, “[T]he public is massively uninformed about both law and judges.”³ Christians could make a difference here by helping to inform the public concerning judges’ integrity. This is part of the answer to the first question above.
Max Boot further comments on the problem of informing the public on judicial problems. “[W]e get most of our news about the courts from reporters who share the principles of the cultural left and are thus part of the problem. Letting cameras into court would change that.” A monitoring citizens group could also summarize and publish abuses for over-occupied families struggling for time to raise their families and in meeting other responsibilities. This is our first clue of a common problem between schools and courts. The primary problem is citizens’ ignorance of abuses in schools and courts. We are also ignorant on how to most effectively oppose such. It is very difficult to educate the public on abuses in both. Any serious effort to inform the public on abuses will in time erode the public’s unquestioning mindset for both schools and the courts. This too has voting power.

A slight digression: If Christians really believed that spirituality included being informed on the issues of their time, their adult and youth Sunday school classes would be significantly different. Did you ever wonder why the Bible told us about the children of Issachar? "And of the children of Issachar, which were men that had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do" - 1 Chronicles 12:32a (KJV).

Boot explained another aspect of the American judicial problem. “There is a cultural consensus that judges’ roles is to provide a check against abuse of minorities by the [unshackled democratic] majority.” (I remember learning this in school when I was a kid and obviously didn’t realize how politically manipulative it was. They teacher failed to mention the importance of a strict and literal Constitution.) To counter this fear, the public forgets that our Founding Fathers intended for new laws to be judged against the Constitution. By this process, the rights of everyone, minorities included, would be protected by judges that stuck to the Constitution. This was the key – judges that stuck to a strict interpretation of the Constitution. The Founding Fathers only considered a firm Constitution that only changed via lawful means by legislative ratification.

Our Founding Fathers intended for judges to be restricted to the interpretation of law, but that’s not always how they operate. Judges have created new laws via creative interpretations and by judicial fiat alone without legal or historical precedent. The Court has now assumed the role that was designed for the Legislature. Americans have prided themselves on their three branches of government that is intended to provide checks and balances, however without realizing it, we are now without a serious check on the judicial branch. If judges are not restricted to the original intention of the Constitution, then the Supreme Court becomes a continual constitution convention. Americans should begin to fear that their liberties are slipping away as the Constitution is interpreted to favor a godless philosophical minority. This special political interest – the extreme godless liberal left is supported with the political power muscle (money and organization) embodied in the NEA.

Boot further explained to what extent public criticism of judges is repelled. It was reported that “Judge Baer was [verbally] attacked for excluding from evidence 80 pounds of drugs.” Because of this “four members of the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit issued a letter claiming, ‘These attacks do a great disservice to the principle of an
independent judiciary’ and ‘threaten to weaken the constitutional structure of this nation.’ The ABA [American Bar Association] even convened a Commission on Separation of Powers and Judicial Independence, whose essential mission was to stifle all attacks on the judiciary. ABA president Jerome Shestak went so far in 1997 as to call [public] attacks on judges ‘un-American.’ Bork also sees a problem. ‘The courts are, apparently, more sacred than the Constitution.’

In contrast to ABA’s complaints, liberal judges are doing an excellent job of weakening the powers of the Constitution all by themselves when they ignore the Constitution’s original intent. Never mind the “un-American” idea of letting the guilty go free or of overriding the will of the people based upon new ways of reading the Constitution. Americans need to hold the Judiciary and Legislature responsible for failing to reign in the unchecked powers of the judiciary. Boot sees a need to “stop judges from overturning state policies,” [and to] “end judicial management of public institutions.” Informed Christians helping to inform others could make a difference here.

Boot also explained that “Judicial infallibility seems to be one of the tenets of the Gospel According to the ABA. If we assume, however, that judges make mistakes like everyone else, it’s hard to see why they alone should be exempt from criticism. Certainly no one suggests that our system of government is being undermined when critics publicly castigate the president of the United States; indeed, this is widely touted as being the essence of democracy. Why should it be any different when the subject of criticism isn’t the leader of the whole nation but a federal judge?”

Boot further admits that, “The suggestion is sometimes made that judges don’t rule based on their own preferences; they rule based on the law. Therefore, defenders of the judiciary argue, it’s not proper to criticize judges for merely applying the rules made by others.” Boot lashes back, “Balderdash. If this book [Out of Order] has shown nothing, else, it has demonstrated that judges all too often make decisions based on their own personal whims—in contravention of the intentions of the law’s drafters. If they’re going to make such high handed rulings, if they’re going to act in essence like politicians, then judges shouldn’t be surprised to be treated like politicians.”

Stephen L. Carter’s The Culture of Disbelief-How American Law and Politics Trivialize Religious Devotion, helps to establish another common denominator between American courts and schools. Both are controlled by the same like-minded godless VOID. Carter explained, “What the Court has not done yet is to retreat from the dangerous trend in its cases (see chapters 6 & 7 in [The Culture of Disbelief]), in which it has come to treat religious beliefs, especially those that are not widely shared, as essentially unimportant parts of human personality, readily ignored and easily changed.” “Modernity,” Bork comments, “seemingly made religion irrelevant.” And David Limbaugh agrees, “[S]ocial engineers actively inculcate hatred of Christianity as ignorant, repressive, and offensive.” Many public school teachers and judges are America’s godless social engineers.
“Samuel B. Kent, U.S. District judge for the Southern District of Texas, decreed that any student uttering the word ‘Jesus’ would be arrested and incarcerated for six months.” Judge Kent further clarified his position. “Anyone who violates these orders, no kidding, is going to wish that he or she had died as a child when this court get through with it.”

So where are the churches in their opposition to this judge? And we think we are free because we can worship in our sealed houses of worship. How stupid can we be?

Robert Bork reminds us that the “American judiciary—the Supreme Court, abetted by the lower federal courts and many state courts—is the single most powerful force shaping our culture.” (This is another common element between courts and government schools.) These judges, Bork explained, belong to an intellectual class that is “left of the American center.” Americans need to understand that this philosophical bent is the reason why we are losing our freedoms. A perusal of the many examples of losses of Christian liberties (Appendix D) shows that the driving issue is not the mechanics of state funding.

Our lose of liberty is due to an increasing secular/godless citizenry programmed by a secular/godless educational system which is guarded by a secular/godless politically powerful NEA that goes unchallenged by a sleeping, apathetic, and ignorant evangelical majority.

Another Prophet

Dr. Francis Schaeffer would concur. “[W]hen the memory of the Christian consensus which gave us freedom within the biblical form is increasingly forgotten, a manipulating authoritarianism will tend to fill the vacuum.”

This manipulating authoritarianism is the humanistic element made up of NEA members and liberal judges. Bork explained that these judges represent political power the left uses to decide issues that would never be enacted in the legislature. Bork later admitted, “The upshot is that the democratic nation is helpless before an antidemocratic, indeed a despotic, judiciary. The American people seem, at the moment, to be submissive and without the political will to reclaim the liberty that is rightfully theirs.” This suggests that government controls are already here, even without direct government subsidies. Bork offers a remedy. “[T]he only practical way of reining in the Supreme Court is a constitutional amendment making its rulings subject to democratic review.”

The same humanistic “manipulating authoritarianism” infests the legislature as well. And from Chapter 9, we know why. (See America’s Godly Heritage DVD for other judicial abuses and The Myth of Separation by David Barton at www.wallbuilder.com.) So we see a third common element between the courts and schools: They are controlled by a powerful political and godless authority.

Legal protections were once proposed by the proponents of the California School Choice initiative to limit the California legislature in adding new controls on private schools. The plan called for a change in the legislative agreement procedure from a simple
majority to three-fourths plus a simple majority of registered voters in agreement before any new state law is added to private schools. (Note: A simple majority of registered voters voting in any election would be a major accomplishment now.)

A Serious Question

If sufficient incriminating information exists against our government schools and courts, then why have there been no serious reforms? While information is available, Mr. Joe Public is massively uninformed, misinformed, and distracted with other issues of profits and pleasures. Sometimes the distraction is too many issues, failing to realize how they are interrelated, or simply failing to recognize the primary issue. Evangelicals share similar problems. *If God’s in control, why should we be involved?* This is the basic reason why a response is lacking from us. Many of us simply don’t know what’s going on or what to do about it. Hosea’s warning comes through again: “My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge…” (Hosea 4:6a NIV).

Has there ever been any other time in history in which people felt oppressed by a powerful ruling authority while many of their neighbors seemed ignorant, overwhelmed by challenges, and apathetic or too busy? Absolutely yes! Americans saw these conditions before just prior to the American Revolution. Even while Britain began to press the Colonies with loss of liberties, a third of Americans were loyalists to Britain and a third didn’t care. This means that the minority that cared for liberty had their first job of spreading news of Britain’s abuses to the other Colonies. Thus was born the Committees of Correspondence.

The Committees of Correspondence served the American Revolution by motivating opposition against British abuses. They established plans for collective action and became the political union among the colonies.

Evangelicals are in the same condition today -- suffering because of a lack of knowledge just as Hosea said of God’s people approximately 2700 years ago. This clearly suggests that evangelicals need to communicate God’s heart on the godless abuses of our time and how we should oppose them. When early Americans read the reports from the Committees of Correspondence, they were motivated to pray, fight, and sacrifice for their liberties. New England ministers also played an important part in spreading this information so much so that the American Revolution was known to the British as the Presbyterian Revolt. The spread of information preceded the American commitment for action. As in Nehemiah’s day, Christians are becoming a despised people (Nehemiah 2:17). We too need to organize and in unity rebuild protections around liberty for all.

Just Imagine

Try to imagine God’s people with more concern with providing all parents a choice to an attractive godly education for their children than for any personal agenda of profits or pleasures. Imagine this concern included a courageous vigilance to counter any political
or legal pressure on independent schools to conform to humanistic ideology or state controls. Imagine that this included a desire to be and stay informed on local, state, and national educational issues, policies, candidates, and that this diligence superseded personal desires for entertainment, recreation, or career planning. Political candidates and state constitutions that favor school choice and the protection of independent schools from added state controls must become primary political issues. Imagine that this also includes a selfless diligence to sacrificially give to support and fight against godless secular forces in our politics, public institutions, courts, and culture by informing others. Can we really say that a cultural and spiritual war is in process in this country, if Christians are not engaged?

Imagine ministers with enough courage and authentic spirituality to speak out and inform their congregations of aggressive secular humanists, despite the challenges of loss of tax-exemption status, conflicts among the laity, offenses from immature Christians or government school teachers in their congregations. (As our society becomes more secular, even tax-exemption status for churches will be lost. It’s only a matter of time in our present state.)[A]

Imagine Christian elementary, high, and Sunday schools with serious apologetic curriculum and resources complete with debate teams and apologetic scholarships for papers and evangelistic youth outreaches.

Imagine ministers instructing against easy belief-ism and preaching that true salvation involves godly obedience.

It’s just as difficult for us to imagine living without secularism being the ruling philosophy in politics, culture, and education as it was for pre-Civil War Christians to consider living without slavery. This difficulty involves the same set of problems. Both involve ignorance concerning God’s grieving heart over the accepted wicked culture and public policies, and both involve fears of offense and personal challenges. It’s amazing how Christians perceive secularism to be a cultural ethos that will always remain a ruling philosophy. Why do we fail to believe in 2 Chronicles 7:14? Atheistic and agnostic secularism, much different than slavery, has only accelerated exponentially in the last sixty years because Christians left a vacuum in law, politics, and education. (See David Barton’s materials at www.wallbuilders.com to see what we have lost so quickly.) When evangelicals realize that we caused atheistic and agnostic secularism growth, by our ignorance and apathy on public school policies, we will see a new day in America. Again this will involve informing other Christians first.

---

[A] Present law allows churches and ministers to speak and write on issues, but not candidates. Although the IRS seemingly turns a blind eye to black churches that support liberal candidates.

Mr. Blumenfeld writes: “The NEA [National Education Association] is concerned with protecting its tax status as a nonprofit organization. How it had been able to keep its tax-exempt status as an active legislative lobby all these years has never been explained.” Source: NEA - Trojan Horse in American Education, Samuel L. Blumenfeld, pg. 165 NEA supports multiple political candidates.
One does not need to convert the majority to Christianity to begin to see a reversal in education policy. Although quality apologetics exist to capture the public’s attention toward Christianity (See Chapter 2 Resources.), educating the public on the financial savings and improvement in education via school choice could be sufficient to turning the public against the NEA’s incompetence and wasteful spending in education. You must see the DVDs: *The Cartel, Waiting for Superman*, and *Stupid in America-How We Cheat Our Kids* to prove this point. See chapter 4 resources.

The public could also be turned against the National Education Association by showing how the NEA’s policy of evangelizing youth in godlessness promotes social problems that the taxpayer will eventually be required to pay for via law enforcement, welfare, and loss of American productivity, etc. The major problem is overcoming the lies and deceptions of the well-organized, over-funded, popular-media-protected, and politically powerful NEA. The second problem will be the legal battles to defend the constitutionality of school choice that will be tested. (The constitutionality of vouchers has already been tested by the Supreme Court and passed by one vote last time. Don’t be mistaken -- godless liberals will try again to defeat it. How committed are we should they finally win?) Will the courts become so godlessly liberal that Christians will have missed their opportunity? If the courts vote to oppose God’s law by favoring abortion, they will go against God’s desire for education as well. God’s not in the control mode we mistakenly think he is, because God have given us the freedom of choice to affect all this. If we lose, does that mean we should give up? The godless don’t give up. If the courts should violate Christian liberties, will Christians then take action to vote for people that will appoint God fearing judges? Will we then seek to limit the courts through judicial restraint, judicial review, and legislative override? Why wait for it go get worse? Presently, the culture seems to favor no restraints on the courts. This also needs to change. The public has been programmed by the liberal schools to fear loss of minority rights via the democratic majority. This fear needs to be redirected to fearing the tyranny of minority rule from the secular-religious-left (humanists). As the courts slowly take our liberties away, we hardly notice. Why do we whimper without a fight?

When Christian education via school choice becomes a keen intense desire among God’s people, we will then begin to see favorable changes in America. A foundation for character education could then be established when the evidence for God is not censored. This is the impediment against decadent behaviors. The political power of the NEA will begin to diminish and this will favor religious freedom again. Many non-Christian parents desire moral education for their children and this could lead to massive evangelism. Only when godly convictions with evidence for God are taught to children, will we see real mega-changes in our culture and society. Churches and Christian schools must also change to include serious apologetics training with reasons to fear God via biblical holiness. Biblical holiness motivates people to please God and avoid God’s judgment. Legalism is man’s attempt to define God’s requirements. In contrast, biblical holiness motivates people to seek God’s requirements.

Cal Thomas’ article, “Exodus from Public Schools Could Change Our Culture,” explained how the Southern Baptist Convention proposed that parents withdraw their
children from public schools. The Baptists cited various biblical reasons such as “Fathers are to bring up their children in the training and admonition of the Lord” (Ephesians 6:4). Mr. Thomas also cited one of the resolution author’s reasons for this massive exodus: “Government schools are converting our children to alien creeds and infusing them with false and destructive values.” The major impediment to this exodus is money. The poor cannot afford it, and the carnal middle class choose not to sacrifice when government provides “free” education. We should not just remove our children. We should give all children the freedom to choose their education.

When one considers the growing political power of the National Education Association, their history of exponentially increasing educational spending and their lobbying for other government expenditures, as well as the NEA’s ability to increase taxes on citizens, and their influence to increase government controls on all of us, the idea of “free” education no longer seems to be so conveniently free. This is especially true when one considers that private schools out-perform government schools many times at half the cost or less per student. The 1991 Statistical Abstract of the United States published by the U.S. government, Department of Commerce, contains a section on private tuition. Nine-five percent of Catholic schools and 88 percent of Protestant schools charged tuitions of $2,500 or less. At that time the average cost per public student was $5,000. For the past twenty plus years the average cost per student in government schools has been twice the private school cost. The largest budget item for states is public education expenses. So we have been spending double for each child in government education during the last twenty plus years and have been getting little in return. Whatever public education takes away from a state’s general fund leaves less for other government services. As we saw in Chapter 9, the NEA has the political machinery in place to dominate and influence public opinion on government spending in all states. Politicians are very intimidated by the political power of the NEA. Again, Christians could make a significant difference here, by informing the public of the NEA abuses and how a school choice policy offers a better option to everyone.

The National Educational Association is so powerfully entrenched that only those with deep and driving godly convictions and love for liberty will ever have the means or will to successfully oppose the NEA. This drive in turn could inform voters on how they have been manipulated by the NEA. This clearly implies that our present dilemma of loss of liberties and social decadence will continue to get worse until Christians become revived with God’s grieving heart to oppose the NEA. Our present condition is our own fault. If real school choice should ever occur, one need not fear state controls, for state control is currently in the power of the godless NEA as their cronies fill the legislatures and courts. When one looks at how politically successful the NEA has been, a win in the area of school choice implies that sufficient forces and means exist to win in the governing philosophy concerning state controls as well. If we can win school choice, we can win constitutional amendments to restrict legislatures and courts too. The NEA is the primary means behind added state control for private schools even without vouchers. The NEA is also the driving force for government controls in more areas of our lives. (See references in chapter 9 and item K in Appendix D for supporting evidence.)
The real question however is...Will our godly convictions even match the NEA’s ungodly convictions? Dare we call anything that doesn’t include opposition to NEA’s godless policies of atheistic/agnostic indoctrination and control a great awakening?

A Possible First Approximation Classroom Profit Model

For many states, public education spending is over $9,000 dollars per student today. This corresponds to over $270,000 dollars per classroom size of thirty students in our government schools. If scholarship vouchers of half this amount ($4,500 per student) was available to students, a new dynamic in education could exist with a savings of $135,000 per every thirty students to the taxpayer. With empty Sunday school classrooms or public schools willing to convert to this model of less bureaucracy, education spending of $135,000 could easily give the primary teacher a salary of $90,000 for nine months of work and three months of summer vacation for a class size of thirty. Now let’s estimate spending $1,000 dollars per month on rent for classroom space for these thirty students. (Many churches will charge much less or nothing at all for this class size, because they want to be perceived as an outreach to the community.) Yet with this high rental fee for a classroom of thirty, this still leaves over $36,000 to buy educational tools and supplies that doesn’t need to be purchased every year. An incentive could also be available for children to take care of their learning tools and materials. Secure cabinets could be provided to protect everything during the regular church services. Don’t assume that the pastor/priest will be the school’s administrator either. The church could rent its facilities to private schools that have no other affiliation to the church as some are doing to private daycare services now.

There is sufficient margin in the remaining $36,000 that such a school could offer an instant college savings plan for those parents that sign up with the school whose tuition is competitively priced. This could be the internal mechanism to keeping public education expense down. Such funds are never transferred to families, but held in trust fund education accounts for each child. Nothing like this exists for government schools today. Children at less expensive schools could accumulate an education savings with freedom to be applied to other schools of choice later or college. This could include special educational options (music classes, drama, sports training) at other schools or special coaches. Give parents and students the choice to design their own education and they will. Can you think of a better incentive to motivate parental involvement in education? Why not give them the option to enroll in as many special schools as they dare dream for their children? A state computerized scholarship program could monitor each child’s spending/saving accounts with easy web access for all students. There is no need for added bureaucracy. If state governments cannot eliminate their bureaucracy, then a private accounting firm can manage this. Don’t expect anybody associated with the NEA or Department of Education to have any motivation to make this work. A private accounting firm will be happy to make it work for less.

Note how easily this class of thirty students could be managed when freedom of resources are given to teachers without union restrictions. (It’s against union rules for some teachers in some districts to spend extra time after class hours working with
This teacher could control his or her own school with new freedoms such as buying supplies or educational tools without board approval, because the teacher is seeking the parents and students’ approval. A parent could remove their child from the school which would immediately terminate any further payment to that school. If a teacher or administrator committed fraud, then criminal action could be filed just as it can be for anyone in government schools now. Administrators’ ethics is not dependent on the model of school funding. *The Cartel* movie shows how some public/government school administrators are stealing from us now and no one is doing anything about it.

This class of thirty students could easily be divided into three groups of ten students each. One group of ten could be with the primary teacher. Another group of ten could be with peer tutoring, teacher aids, volunteer parents, or the student group could momentarily work independently. The third group of ten could experience computer instruction. Now rotate these three groups between all learning modes. Breaks and variety could provide the mental recess children need. Parents, teachers, and students could design their own education which would be suited to their special needs. The evidence shows that more students are likely to excel at must less cost to taxpayers if given a choice.

**Words of Warning**

Don’t be fooled by small short-term victories. It’s good for Christians to start charter schools, get elected to school boards, and become public school teachers. However, all this has limited Christian effectiveness for the same reason Christian teachers are already limited now in public schools. Any such energy spent does nothing to oppose the growing political power of the NEA. Neither does it work towards safeguarding true religious liberty. Neither do these actions promote choice of a godly education for all children. Any activity involving the teaching of values in a God vacuum is in vain as we have already noted in Chapter 5.

Don’t be deceived. Neutrality on religious or philosophical concepts is not even an education option anymore. As long as teachers can smile or smirk in response to students’ questions, a value will be transmitted especially if that teacher is respected by the student. Philosophical and religious neutrality doesn’t exist in any school. For this reason, there can never be a true separation of church and state. What is now occurring instead is the exclusion of traditional faiths and the inclusion of non-traditional beliefs. “Canada’s Christian Heritage Party leader Ron Gray observed, ‘We must not make the mistake of thinking that secular means neutral. Secularism is a religious worldview, the most bigoted faith on earth: its goal is to extirpate every other faith.’”

Don’t lose focus, conviction, or heart. The primary issue should be establishing schools of choice for all Americans. No one should be forced to attend a humanistic (atheistic and agnostic favoring) government school. Godless humanism is the seed to social decadence and government tyranny. Godless humanism is the religion of humanistic teachers and liberal judges. Godless humanism is the secular religion behind socialism. When it’s believed that God doesn’t exist, then one must look to the state for solutions. Our focus should be on anything that will weaken this humanistic foundation of state
indorsed humanistic religion. Opposing abortion, euthanasia, and special gay rights are important, but school choice via scholarship vouchers AND tuition tax-credits is the primary battle for opposing the seeds of godlessness, liberal tyranny, and social decadence in all forms. This focus should include reigning in liberal godless judges and strengthening independent schools and severe limiting added government controls via constitutional amendments. The battle to make judges accountable in interpreting the Constitution per its original intention and limiting constitutional changes only via the Legislature is the second major battle. To focus on the economy alone is pure carnality. As the godless element grows, voters can expect increased taxes to pay for the liberal utopia’s facade. We can expect the government to go deeper into debt.

The public perceives a growing and controlling political correctness. What they fail to perceive is that as this mindset seeks to eliminate all other religious and philosophical expressions, so it will in time also limit discussion on opposing political thought as well. This is already occurring in our universities. The signs are already here. Liberals are experts of limiting freedom under misleading proposals like the Fairness Doctrine that would in practice impede and silence anyone who disagrees with them.

**Final Summary**

Speaking through Hosea, God said “[M]y people are destroyed from lack of knowledge” (Hosea 4:6a NIV ) and “a people without understanding will come to ruin” (Hosea 4:14b NIV).

Evangelicals lack knowledge on how atheism and agnosticism are promoted state endorsed secular religions in our supposed neutral schools. We fail to understand that separation of church and state is only applied to traditional religion. Atheistic and agnostic secularism is excluded from this policy. Lacking this knowledge, evangelicals have compromised and permitted atheism and agnosticism to be imposed upon children without any other educational choice. We fail to discern that our present education policy of godlessness is the reason our society is increasingly godless and decadent. We have sown atheistic/agnostic seeds for decades among American youth and our culture and society is showing the secular anti-Christian fruits as a result. It is our fault! (See chapter 2 for references and resources.)

Evangelicals lack knowledge on the politics of atheism/agnosticism and the spirituality of politics required to oppose such primary evils. (Chapter 3 shows what we have missed.)

Evangelicals lack knowledge on school choice policies and how to win this for all citizens, while the godless seek to indoctrinate children in atheism and agnosticism without any educational choice (Reference chapters 4 and 9). Many evangelicals lack knowledge on just how aggressive the humanists have been in politics and in our schools.

Evangelicals also lack knowledge of the futility of character education without God. (See chapter 5.) Values in a God vacuum are in vain. While evangelicals focus on individual social decadence of abortion, drugs, euthanasia, special gay rights, pornography,
redefinition of the family, and other social ills; evangelicals fail to see that all this are the natural outcomes of a state endorsement of godlessness in our education institutions. Evangelicals fail to see the primary danger is the state endorsement of atheism and agnosticism. Evangelicals fail to understand that there can never be a separation of church and state. Someone’s beliefs will be imposed on others as long as no freedom of educational choice exists in America (Reference chapters 2 and 5).

Why are we only allowed to present this worldview [atheistic, agnostic humanism] to our young people in our classrooms today? The vast majority of Christians in this country don’t have the foggiest idea of what’s going on.  

Dr. David Noebel, author of Mind Siege with Tim LaHaye

Evangelicals lack knowledge in apologetics as well as the spirituality of apologetics. We therefore fail to discern why our evangelism is so ineffective for our time (Reference chapter 6).


Evangelicals lack knowledge on how our popular sound-bite theologies are in error. Evangelicals fail to discern how false theologies cause indifference and apathy among us. Evangelicals fail to understand God’s heart and purpose on many social issues and that we are responsible for these things, not God. We are called to oppose the state indoctrination of secular religion in our “public” schools and we are to resist godlessness in our courts as well (Reference chapters 7 and 10). Evangelicals are ignorant of their sacred rebellion – a spirituality they mistakenly think God approves of. Evangelicals will learn either in this life or the next that God is very much opposed to what we think is spiritual. Unfortunately, most evangelicals are seriously mistaken about God.

God is not in the micromanagement control mode most evangelicals believe God is in.

Evangelicals lack knowledge of the carnality and futility of many of their “worship centers” that fail to warn and encourage action against the primary cause of godlessness. Evangelicals fail to understand how their worship is lacking if they do not also model the heart of the God they think they are worshipping. Evangelicals thus fail to sense God’s judgment on them and their country (Reference chapter 8).

Evangelicals lack knowledge of the growing menace connected with the most political powerful special interest on the face of the earth—the National Education Association. (See chapter 9.) We fail to see that their political winners appoint the godless, liberal judges in our courts and have set the godless policies over our “public” schools. This is not of God’s design. Public policy sin is as real as individual sin. God is not in total control, because God has given us a choice in our government. Many are also ignorant of
the freedoms we are losing. Evangelicals therefore lack knowledge on how to successfully oppose the NEA and protect liberties for all Americans through a school choice policy.

Evangelicals lack knowledge on how to oppose godless judges (Reference this chapter 10).

It is because of this lack of knowledge we fail in our opposition against godlessness. Consequently, we fail to successfully oppose the primary cause of decadence for our time. Therefore, the loss of liberty progresses and godlessness increases. In Hosea’s 4:6 warning, we - the tempering forces, lack God’s knowledge and will therefore perish. My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge (Hoses 4:6). The first step toward a solution therefore should include the spreading of this knowledge among evangelicals.

*It is the collapse of those tempering forces (traditional beliefs and institutions) that has brought us to a triumphant modern liberalism with all the cultural and social degradation that follows in its wake.*

Robert H. Bork in *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline.*

We had all better focus our minds on what will result if these pressures continue to succeed. The long and short of it is that Plato’s guardians will possess—body, mind, and soul—all the children of our society and mold them as “mere creatures” of a Godless state—an incalculable disaster.

William Bentley Ball in *Mere Creatures of the State?*

What you do to protect children toward freedom of choice in education is also required to protect your freedom from the growing controlling godless state. State propaganda in godless secularism, the political power of the godless NEA, and godless liberal judges are the manipulators. Can you discern the common denominator?

Those that begin to understand the godlessness in public education tend to home school or seek private Christian education. These same parents tend to seek a protected environment for their children. Most tend to define this as total separation from the world. Since they are paying for it, this is what they think is best for their children. Unfortunately, this tendency becomes a circling-the-wagons syndrome - a defensive position with the forgotten mandate from our Lord to reach our world for Christ. They forget that a school choice public policy option with independent schools with serious disciplined programs, meaningful apologetic, and holiness instruction on what God really requires (not legalism) could offset their concerns of worldly influence on their children. This could provide significant evangelism in our time as the ungodly will also want safe, meaning educational environments for their children too.

Many Christian parents often vote along with the teacher’s union against scholarship vouchers for fear that such will bring on added state controls. They fail to understand the legalistic difference between scholarship vouchers with constitutional protections and
vouchers of the raw direct institutional subsidies kind. Chapter 9 explains how the National Education Association is in significant legal and political control now. These well meaning parents also fail to discern how a real school choice option could take political power and resources from the NEA. This is why the NEA fights so hard against school choice for all students.

The bottom line is simply too many evangelicals do not know what is going on or how to react to all this. There is absolutely no focus or sponsorship of this in our sanctuaries. This too promotes our ignorance. And our ignorance promotes our apathies. For those that do understand, they tend to operate with the monastic-like lifestyle to completely separate from anything worldly. The result of all this is that no serious organization exists to encourage a real school choice initiative that would enable all parents to choose a private Christian education for their children. This also means that no coordinate effort existsto oppose the growing political threat of the NEA. By our ignorance and fears we fail to provide a significant means to reach our hurting and crying world for Christ. And the decadence in spirituality, society, culture, politics, and economics grows. It is our fault.

We evangelicals are to be blamed and will be judged by God. We are already beginning to reap what we have sown via a polarized country, gridlocked Congress, corrupt society, and failing economy.

When will you tell another evangelical?

“My people are destroyed from lack of knowledge. ‘Because you have rejected knowledge, I also reject you as my priests; because you have ignored the law of your God, I also will ignore your children.’ ”

Hosea 4:6 (NIV)
715-710 B.C.

What should Bill and Irene do?

1) Bill and Irene need to form a Committee of Correspondence that will inform evangelicals and friends concerning humanistic abuses in schools and courts. We must fight for school choice and elect candidates and state constitution changes that favor free independent schools of choice as a top Christian evangelistic priority.

2) A must-read is David J. Harmer’s book: School Choice – Why We Need It. How We Get It. (Straight Talk from the Author of California’s Parental Choice in Education Initiative.)

3) Bill and Irene need to fight against evangelical ignorance by spreading what they have learned. This could lead to repentance of our individual and collective sins (2 Chronicles 7:14). Such will lead to our next Great Awakening.
4) Bill and Irene need to start a “Children of Issachar” (1 Chronicles 12:32) Sunday school class or home cell group with the resources in this book. Why not begin teaching the spirituality of the Lordship of Christ in all of life?

Get any of the DVDs, audio sources, or books recommended in this study and share/loan with a Sunday school class, your family, neighbors, and friends. These resources are guaranteed to promote group discussion and provide significant evidence toward this book’s thesis. Use them to build a neighborhood coalition or a committee of correspondence of like minded friends. Let these resources speak for themselves. We need not agree on everything, we just need to oppose the godless NEA via school choice through scholarship vouchers, tuition tax-credits, and private funded scholarships. All such educational funding options with constitutional protections against added state controls and like-minded politicians should be favored.

Don’t think for one moment that tuition tax-credit or school choice favoring people alone will be sufficient via their own coalitions to overcome the NEA. We must encourage the merging of political coalitions between school choice and tuition tax-credit favoring people. We must unit against the NEA. Neither school choice nor tuition tax-credit has any chance of winning without the support of the other. To think otherwise is a failure to fully comprehend the total political power and organization of the NEA.

We must stand against judicial abuses. And we must plant seeds for liberty against the godless manipulating forces that would force their philosophies on America’s children without any educational choice. If we wait for everyone to believe everything as we do before we act to form political coalitions with them, then our sectarianism will isolate us and cause American children to have no choice but continued atheistic/agnostic indoctrination. Forming a political union with anyone against the godless NEA does not mean that one must give up cherished religious beliefs. On the contrary, this protects religious beliefs for everyone.

EVENTS:

National School Choice Week
801 W Norton Ave, Muskegon, MI 49441
The first event was January 23-29, 2011. Expect future annual events on the fourth week in January. www.SchoolChoiceWeek.com (877) 367-0705

Resources:

1) America’s Godly Heritage (DVD or booklet) by David Barton, www.wallbuilders.com

2) Education and the Founding Fathers (DVD or booklet) by David Barton
   www.wallbuilders.com
Websites & Organizations:
1) Alliance For School Choice  
1660 L. Street, NW, Suite 1000, Washington, DC 20036  
Phone: 202-280-1990  Email: info@allianceForSchoolChoice.org  
Website: www.allianceforschoolchoice.org

2) School Choice Wisconsin  
2025 N. Summit Ave. Suite 103  
Milwaukee, WI 53202  
Phone: (414) 319-9160, Fax: (414) 765-0220, Email: scw@parentchoice.org  
Website: www.schoolchoiceinfo.org

3) The Center for Education Reform  
910 Seventeenth Streeth, NW, Suite 1120, Washington, DC 20006  
Phone: 800-521-2118, 301-986-8088 Email: cer@edreform.com  
Website: www.edreform.com/school_choice/


Books
1) School Choice – Why We Need it. How We Get it., David J. Harmer  
-Straight Talk from the Author of California’s Parental Choice in Education Initiative.  (ISBN: #1-56901-221-0)  
Published by: Northwest Publishing Inc.  
5949 South 350 West  
Salt Lake City, Utah 84107  
(801) 266-5900  Toll Free Order Number: 1-800-322-1300


3) Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline, Robert H. Bork  

4) Out of Order – Arrogance, Corruption, and Incompetence on the Bench, Max Boot,  
Basic Books, A Member of Perseus Books, L.L.C.

5) God Save This Honorable Court – Live Recordings of Landmark Supreme Court Cases with Commentary by D. James Kennedy, Ph.D. and Herbert W. Titus,  
Coral Ridge Ministries, P.O. Box 40, Fort Lauderdale, Florida 33302-0040
6) *The Myth of Separation*-What is the correct relationship between Church and State?, David Barton, WallBuilder Press  www.wallbuilders.com

This book proves that separation of church and state as a means to silence traditional believers is a myth by using the quotes of the Founding Fathers and the actual decisions of the Supreme Court from 1795 to 1952. (This is an outstanding resource for American Christian history.)

7) *Persecution* – How Liberals are Waging War Against Christianity,
David Limbaugh

8) *Secular Sabotage* – How Liberals are Destroying Religion and Culture in America, Bill Donohue, FaithWords publisher

**Pamphlets & Articles:**


3) “False Assumptions on Voucher Programs and the Law,” William Bentley Ball
Appendix A: School Violence

“A nationwide survey conducted by Zogby International, revealed that a majority of K-12 school teachers believe their classrooms are more prone to violence than they were five years ago. Twenty-eight percent of general education teachers have had students with weapons present in their school in the last year. Zogby surveyed a representative sample of K-12 special education and general education teachers between September 26 and October 5, 2009; the survey has a margin of error of +/- 4.3 percent for general education teachers.” [Source: http://www.crisisprevention.com/educatorsurvey/index.asp]

The following list is a sampling of news reports that I have randomly collected on the topic of fatal or near fatal acts of violence on U.S. elementary, middle school, and high school campuses. This list does not include violence by and to children in their homes and neighborhoods.[A] This list does include some Columbine copycat plots that were discovered by the authorities with the potential to kill with bombs, guns, school maps and hit lists. I am not confident that all such incidents are always reported either.

Please keep in mind that there are no mandatory federal school crime reporting and tracking requirements for Grades K to 12 in public schools. For this information, concerned parents should seek out the local police department for any history of violent crimes at or near their local public schools. [Source: http://hubpages.com//hub/Violence-and-Safety-In-Todays-Public-Schools] A school choice option could change this crime reporting issue overnight as schools in a school-choice policy compete for students and inform parents of their history and the history of their competitors.

And please be aware that the list below neither includes college or university campus violence. Robyn Gearey of The New Republic reported, “Schools neglect to report as many as 75 percent of the crimes committed on their campuses.” [Sources: 1) School Violence, Edited by Denise M. Bonnilla; and 2) “College Cop-out: Closing the Books on Campus Crime,” by Robyn Gearey, The New Republic, November 10, 1997]

Elementary, Middle, and High School Campus Violence

[A] A brief look at violence between homes and schools will include the following:

A) S. Patrick Kachur of the National Center for Injury Prevention and Control found that from 1992 to 1994, 105 people (including 76 students) had died on school grounds or while traveling between home and school. Eighty-one percent were homicides, and the remainder were suicides or accidents. Seventeen percent of the school deaths were caused by knives. [Source: “School-Associated Violent Deaths in the United States, 1992 to 1994,” S. Patrick Kachur, JAMA 12 June, 1996, pp. 1729-33]

B) Between September 2008 and October 7, 2009, 402 Chicago students were shot, says Monique Bond, a spokesman for the district. [Source: The Wall Street Journal, October 7, 2009, “Violent Deaths Shock Chicago into Action”] (At least 45 students have died in the past 12 months in Chicago neighborhoods alone. But what is currently happening in the rest of the country?)
Note: This list of school violence and school murderers is not current. A full time job is needed for this.


2) February 2, 1996, Moses Lake, WA: 14-year-old Barry Loukaitis killed two students and a teacher when he fired upon his algebra class with an assault rifle. Source: *School Violence*, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 25.


4) On October 1, 1997; Luke Woodham fatally shot 2 students and wounded 7 others after stabbing his mother to death. Source: *The Gazette*, March 22, 2005, pg. A8 (Luke and his friends were said to be outcasts who worshiped Satan.)

5) October 7, 1997, Moose Lake, MN: A 14-year-old boy was caught pointing a loaded handgun at his classmates. The boy obtained the gun from a locked cabinet in his mother’s house after feeling threatened at school. Source: *School Violence*, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 25.


7) On December 1, 1997, Michael Carneal, 14, killed 3 students and wounded 5 at Health High school in West Paducah, KY. Source: *The Gazette*, March 22, 2005, pg. A8 (These students were shot while they were praying together.) Source: *School Violence*, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 25.


10) March 6, 1998, Indianapolis, IN: Teased by a female student about his ears, an 8-year-old elementary school student brought a loaded .25 caliber pistol, apparently stolen from his 19-year-old brother, to school, and subsequently pointed the handgun at a classmate. Source: *School Violence*, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 25.


12) On March 25, 1998 in Daly City, CA a 13-year-old, supposedly angry at being sent home from school, fired a pistol at the principal in a crowded schoolyard of his middle school. Source: *School Violence*, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 25.

14) May 9, 1998, Memphis, TN: A 5-year-old took a loaded pistol to school after he had been given a “time-out” by his teacher. According to authorities, the child had shown a fellow student a bullet and told him that he wanted to shoot his teacher and another student. Source: School Violence, Edited by Denise M. Bonila, pg. 24.


16) On May 21, 1998 in Springfield, OR; Kip Kinkel, 17 years old, killed his parents, then two students at a high school. Twenty-two others were wounded at Becky-Davis Elementary School. Source: The Gazette, March 22, 2005, pg A8

17) May 21, 1998, St Charles, MO: Three sixth-grade boys were accused of conspiring to murder their classmates on the last day of school. Source: School Violence, Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 24.


19) April 20, 1999 in Littleton, CO, Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold killed 12 students, one teacher and then committed suicide. Twenty-three others were wounded. School Violence, Edited by Denise M. Bonila, pg. 24.


27) On October 24, 2000 in Glendale, AZ; Sean Botkin, 14 years old, held 32 classmates and a teacher hostage until he surrendered.
28) January 10, 2001 in Oxnard, CA; Richard Lopes, 17 years old, held a girl hostage at Hueneme High until he was shot dead by a police officer.

29) January 17, 2001 in Baltimore, MD, one student shot and killed in front of Lake Clifton Eastern High school.

30) On March 5, 2001 in Santee, CA; Charles Andrew Williams, 15 years old, at Santana High shot and killed two and wounded 13.

   Note: References #14, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22 above are also from TIME, March 19, 2001 pg. 30-31


33) March 30, 2001 in Gary, IN, Donald R. Burt, Jr., 17, killed one student.

34) November 12, 2001 in Caro, MI, Chris Buschbacher, 17, took two hostages before killing himself.

35) January 15, 2002, two students were shot at Martin Luther King Jr. High school in New York, NY and listed in serious condition. Source: The Gazette, January 16, 2002, pg A10

36) April 14, 2003 in New Orleans, LA, four teenagers killed one student and wounded 3 students by gunfire.

37) April 24, 2003 in Red Lion, PA, James Sheets, 14, killed principal Eugene Segro and then committed suicide.

38) September 24, 2003 in Cold Springs, MN, John McLaughlin, 15, killed 2 students.

39) A 14-year-old boy fatally shot his school bus driver in Cumberland City, TN.

40) A teenage girl, Camille Burke 17, shot another girl, Kaliesha Cheatam 17, in the chest while they were riding on a school bus with about 30 other students in
Miramar, FL. They had been arguing. Cheatam was in critical condition at Memorial Regional Hospital. Source: FOXNews.com – Girl Shot on Florida School Bus, 11/15/2005

41) A boy was stabbed to death during a fight in a Denver Public school cafeteria. Source: The Gazette, January 5, 2005, pg Metro 3

42) Jeff Weise, 16 years old, killed his grandfather and grandfather’s girl friend then drove to his high school on the Red Lake Reservation. He then killed a security guard, a teacher and five students while other students begged him to stop. Then Jeff committed suicide. Source: The Gazette, March 3, 2005, pg A6

43) In Klamath Falls, OR; two girls were charged with attempted murder after they confessed to putting rat poison into milk cartons of two fellow students. Source: The Gazette, September 21, 2005

44) A 9-year-old girl pleaded guilty to second-degree manslaughter after admitting she fatally stabbed her 11-year-old playmate after a tug of war over a rubber ball. Source: The Gazette, October 9, 2005, pg. A3


46) Christopher Penley, 15 years old, was shot by a deputy because he was brandishing a pellet gun that looked like a 9 mm handgun. Source: The Gazette, January 20, 2006; pg A5


49) On September 19, 2006, Lakeview, Oregon; Holley Sweeny, a 14-years-old girl, tried to poison two classmates with rat poison in their milk. Source: The Gazette, May 14, 2006, pg A3

50) At Venice High School in Los Angeles, CA, a teenage boy was fatally shot in the school parking lot. The suspect escaped. Source: The Gazette, June 6, 2006, pg A3

51) In Hillsborough, N.C., Alvaro Castillo, 19 years old, killed his father then wounded two students at Orange School. Source: The Gazette, Sept. 1, 2006, pg. A7


54) In Framingham, MA; John Odgren, 16-years-old, stabbed and killed James Alenson in the hallway at his high school in an affluent Boston suburb.
55) “School threats brought to light,” The Gazette, 5/26/2007, pg. 1. With the new Safe2Tell hotline, authorities were tipped to 16 planned attacks on Colorado schools.
59) February 11, 2008 in Memphis, TN, a 17-year-old boy student shot and wounded a classmate.
60) February 12, 2008 in Oxnard, CA, a 14-year-old boy shot and killed a 15 year old student.
61) November 12, 2008 in Fort Lauderdale, FL, a 15-year-old female student was shot and killed by a classmate at Dillard High School.
62) “S.C. Teen Arrested In Alleged Bomb Plot,” The Gazette, 4/21/2008, A7. “The teen planned to make several bombs and had all the supplies needed to kill dozens at Chesterfield High School… ‘The only thing left was delivering the bombs,’ the police chief said.”
63) In Tyler, TX a 16-year-old student fatally stabbed a special-ed music teacher.
Source: The Gazette, 9/24/09, pg. A8
64) A 16-year-old girl and 17-year-old boy were arrested for planning an armed attack at Harris High School. “This raises the number of local students accused in the past week involving threats at local schools to seven.” Source: The Gazette, Students arrested for threats, 5/3/2007.
65) This is not a complete list of school violence during the writing of this book because of limitations and a need to be focused on other topics.

When a secular society is distracted with their own profits and pleasures they forget. They also become prey to the media’s spin and fail to discern the philosophical and political agendas behind public education’s posturing. When a secular society believes neighborhood secular schools are safe, the facts are irrelevant. The public may even believe there are no real working answers to school violence. Some blogs reflect this. Christians have the potential to inform the public otherwise. This too has voting power.
Appendix B: Public School Sex Abuse

From January 2006 to February 2008, “46 public schools employees in Colorado alone have been charged with sex abuse crimes against children. The AP (Associated Press) investigation found more than 2,500 cases over five years nationwide that range ‘from bizarre to sadistic.’ Though sexual abuse appears far more widespread in public schools than it was in church, only a handful of newspapers – including The Gazette – ran the AP series.” (Source: The Gazette, “Save the children,” 2/24/2008, pg. A30, Colorado Springs, Colorado)

“The Gazette reported in September that Colorado school districts had taken 75 disciplinary actions against teachers for sexual abuse since 1995. That’s bad enough, but under-represents the scope of the problem. Sheryyll Kraiser, executive director of the Denver-based Safe Child Program, told The Gazette’s editorial opinion department it’s common for principals and teachers to ignore laws that require them to report sexual abuse. Kraiser, a professional witness in sexual abuse cases, said mandatory reporting laws are ‘almost never enforced [by public school officials].’” (Source: The Gazette, “School Sex Abuse,” 4/19/2009, pg. A14, Colorado Springs, Colorado)

Another Resource: “The Sex Abuse Scandal in the Classroom,” A Good Housekeeping article (May 2003) by Tamara Jones.

Appendix C: The Columbine God Question – Why it’s Debated and the Ramifications.

Multiple Columbine witnesses gave testimony that a killer had asked two girls (Cassie Bernall and Valeen Schnurr) in the library, the question: “Do you believe in God?”

On the day of the shooting, while Cassie’s parents and youth pastor, Dave McPherson, wandered in the neighborhood and school area, a girl, a stranger, ran up to Dave and said, “Oh my God, they asked her if she believed in God, and when she said yes, they shot her.”

The Bernalls said they first heard through Craig Scott and then later from Joshua Lapp. Both had been in the library during the massacre.

Emily Wyant was the closest person to Cassie at the time of the shooting. “Immediately following the massacre, Emily was so traumatized she could not remember any details about what had happened. Several weeks into the summer, she said she did remember and indicated that Cassie’s killer did not ask that question.”

On September 23, 1999, Dave Cullen, A Denver-based journalist, was the first one to go public with a different story in an article titled: “Inside the Columbine High Investigation: Everything You Know about the Littleton Killings Is Wrong. But the truth
may be scarier than the myths.” This report will be called Cullen’s debunking article. His article intended to debunk the original story that the killers had targeted “jocks” (athletes), minorities, and Christians. Cullen wrote, “Not a scrap of evidence supports that conclusion.” They were simply “equal-opportunity haters.” Various media outlets were quick to spread the new story that Cassie was not asked the God question and was therefore not the martyr that was first popularly published.

Emily’s story was that she was crouched beneath a table less than two feet from Cassie when Dylan Klebold shot Cassie without asking the God question. “Emily said Cassie was praying out loud, ‘Dear God, Dear God. Why is this happening? I just want to go home.’ [Cullen admitted that] Emily wonders whether Klebold heard Cassie praying and singled her out.”

Even with Emily’s testimony that Cullen reported, his “equal-opportunity hater” theory does not follow. Cullen has to force this interpretation. Emily’s testimony conveyed the idea that the killer was attracted to Cassie simply because she was praying out loud. If the killers were so “equal-opportunity haters,” then both Emily and Cassie should have been killed when the killers were in their area. Why did the killers pause to step outside the library without killing all the students in the library first if they were equal-opportunity haters? Cullen reported that over fifty students were trapped in the library at the time only ten were killed. If they hated the world, then all the students should have died. Instead of killing all, they systematically killed those they chose, and that was significantly less than the total number of students trapped in the library. This is clearly not the behavior of “equal-opportunity haters.”

Cullen also wrote: “But while no one would go on the record, key investigators made it clear that an alternate scenario is far more likely. The killers asked another girl, Valeen Schnurr, a similar question, then shot her, and she lived to tell about it. Schnurr’s story was then apparently misattributed to Cassie.”

While no one was willing to go on record for Cullen’s debunking article, such was not the case for the story Cullen tried to debunk. Cullen somehow missed the fact that Craig Scott, Evan Todd, and Joshua Lapp were willing to go on record, and did, with Chris Zimmerman, a Plough publishing representative. Patti Nielson, an art teacher who had been huddled under the checkout desk, also went on record with the Denver Post. “‘You’d hear them yell something terrible,’ Nielson said, ‘Then boom.’” “‘When one girl said, ‘Oh God, oh God,’” an assassin asked her, “Do you believe in God?’ When she said she did, she was shot. But another girl also cried, ‘Oh God, oh God.’” and I didn’t hear shots, so I knew she was alive.” The question remains, why is there no investigator willing to go on record to support Cullen’s debunking theory?

Cullen also got the question-shooting sequence backwards with Schnurr. Per the June 13, 1999, Denver Post, Schnurr, with an exposed bleeding torso, was crying out, “Oh, my God,” when Harris asked her, “Do you believe in God?” “Schnurr had heard the result when Bernall professed her faith. Still Schnurr answered truthfully. ‘Yes, my mom and dad brought me up that way,’ Schnurr replied. She fainted and fell to the floor.”
Then a problem became evident with Emily’s version of Cassie’s death. The ballistics report revealed that it was not Dylan Klebold, but Eric Harris who had killed Cassie. (Remember the “Basement Videos”? It was Eric Harris that said, “I will shoot the Christian girls in the head.”) Investigators took several students back into the bloody library and wanted them to explain who sat where and what they heard. When Craig Scott was asked where he had heard Cassie’s response to the God question, he pointed in the direction of Val Schnurr’s location.

Despite the fact that Craig Scott heard two separate exchanges, like Patti Nielson who was huddled under the checkout desk, Craig’s directional mistake was evidence enough to the debunkers that the God question was only asked of Schnurr.

Craig Scott went on record saying, “They can throw all this around, but I was there. Reporters can’t tell me or investigators can’t tell me how it went. They don’t know jack. I was there. They can help somewhat to get the story together, but I heard what I heard.”

From human audio localization experiments a term called the “cone of confusion” leads to what is also called the “front-back error.” This means that the origin of sound can be confused. Another factor adding to this confusion is room acoustics. One study from the Department of Cognitive and Neural Systems and Biomedical Engineering at Boston University reported that, “spatial perception is effected by room acoustics more than the literature might suggest.” Another study also indicated that auditory localization is more difficult for listeners wearing double hearing protection (earplugs and earmuff) than it is for listeners wearing single hearing protection (earplugs or earmuff). While no one in the library was wearing such devices, Craig admitted that his ears had been ringing from the gun shots. This very well added an impediment to the localization of voices for him. The very natural human response, during this highly stressful period, would be to focus on survival. The origin of all voices during that noisy chaos would be a secondary concern.

Craig said, “I don’t remember the exact words but I know it was dealing with God, and I know there was a yes.” Craig said that he heard a second exchange on the other side of the room.

When Zimmerman reinterviewed Evan Todd, Todd admitted, “I heard a voice from a part of the room where, later, I heard was where Cassie was. She was praying out loud and they asked her if she believed in God and she said yes,” Evan said that he heard another girl who had been shot on the opposite side of the library. “She was screaming ‘Oh my God, oh my God.’ I didn’t ever hear them ask her if she believed in God.”

Why the conflict over the God question?

Cullen gives us some clues in his original debunking article. Cullen reported that an investigator admitted, “It appears that exactly who they taunted, what questions were asked and who replied what may never be crystal clear. And even if it is clear,
**investigators clearly don’t intend to tell.** (My emphasis of his quote.). They cited the tense political climate around the story in this heavy evangelical community, as well as the potential embarrassment to Cassie’s family, uniformly describing the Bernalls as sincere victims who may have been misinformed ‘through no malicious intent.’”¹³ (Be careful with this last statement expressing a desire to protect the Bernalls. It doesn’t agree with facts to be revealed.)

Note carefully the investigators’ bias. *And even if it is clear, investigators clearly don’t intend to tell.* Does this appear as strange behavior for public servants of a public investigation concerning a public crime against public safety? Why should anything be hid from the public? If someone is so biased, then naturally nothing is ever going to be crystal clear enough to report anything to anyone. What could possibly be motivating them? Notice again, Cullen recites the investigators’ concern (fears) with “the tense political climate around the story in this heavy evangelical community.”

These investigators should be politically, religiously, and philosophically neutral in their investigation. But don’t ever fool yourself. They too are not operating in a philosophical/religious vacuum. Why should they, or anyone, be concerned with the politics of the evangelicals? Why is this even a topic on the table, unless there is something the investigators fear could inflame (or motivate) the evangelicals? If they are so biased, then this suggests that they too are operating from a philosophical bias that is opposed to the evangelicals.

Cullen wrote in his debunking article: “Lead investigator Kate Battan broke five months of virtual silence with her public comments. The sources say that many of the most notorious events from the shooting spree -- repeated over and over in news reports, on TV chat shows and now in a bestselling book -- simply never occurred.”¹⁴

That bestselling book was: *She Said, Yes – The Unlikely Martyrdom of Cassie Bernall.* It was written by her mother, Misty Bernall, who was told by the same lead investigator, Kate Battan, to continue writing the book. Kate told Misty not to stop writing because the alternative (debunking) theory was her opinion only and “had nothing to do with the objective of the investigation”¹⁵ Yet Kate broke her silence within two weeks of the book’s release, and Cullen printed Kate’s doubt as though it was part of the official report. The investigators’ originally expressed concerns of not wanting to embarrass the Bernalls now appear to be hypocritical, misleading, and a deceptive decoy. Obviously the real concerns (fears) were focused on a potential evangelical public response rather than any embarrassment to the Bernalls.

Despite testimonies of various witnesses, Cullen reported what some investigators wanted the public to believe. “But investigators were willing to say that whichever girl was asked about her faith, her life did not hinge on her answer. One key investigator said there is no evidence the outcome would have been any different if she had denied she believed in God.”

Such a statement, without a single witness to support it, cannot come closer to raw speculation. Considering the nature of this message, it holds every characteristic of a
secular, atheistic, agnostic bias. And we should ask why. It has every appearance of a response from an embarrassed atheist. Could this response be a natural atheistic tendency to hide the idea that for Columbine, atheism was one of the many factors leading to violence? How embarrassing this would be for atheists.

If gays had been singled out in that library and shot, these secular investigators would have reported it, and every gay activist in the country would have sought public sympathy for their next political move.

What could be more embarrassing for atheists, but a story of atheists killing their fellow students because of their belief in atheism? What could an atheist fear more than evangelicals learning definitively that two atheistic inclined boys willfully killed Christians at their school? What could the secularists fear more, but evangelicals and the public waking up to the consequences of state-sponsored atheistic secularism in education? What could the humanists fear, but evangelicals rallying behind a common cause that could emerge as an effective unified force against godless humanistic politics affecting government education? What could anti-traditional-religious groups fear more, but public sympathy for traditional religious people mixed with a fear that their kids could be shot next or converted to atheism? Creating confusion over the God question could be sufficient to dampening any evangelical or public response from youth rallies to politics. The message succeeded. It confused Christians and the public as to what happened and why.

But the real fears may pertain to the potential development from the general public concerns. Imagine an apprehensive public that has finally awakened to the cruel consequences of secular atheistic VOID and consequently becomes hungry for an antidote. It's what Arthur Allen Leff, the secular professor of law at Yale Law School, wrote about in Law and Technology: On Shoring up a Void and in Unspeakable Ethics, Unnatural Law.

_I want to believe – and so do you – in a complete, transcendent, and immanent set of propositions about right and wrong, findable rules that authoritatively and unambiguously direct us how to live righteously. I also want to believe – and so do you – in no such thing, but rather that we are wholly free, not only to choose for ourselves what we ought to do, but do decide for ourselves, individually and as a species, what we ought to be. What we want, Heaven help us, is simultaneously to be perfectly ruled and perfectly free, that is at the same time to discover the right and good and to create it._

_All I can say is this: it looks as if we are all we have. Given what we know about ourselves, and each other, this is an extraordinarily unappetizing prospect; looking around the world, it appears that if all men are brothers, the ruling model is Cain and Abel. Neither reason, nor love, nor even terror, seems to have worked to make us “good,” and worse than that, there is no reason why any thing should. Only if ethics were something unspeakable by us could law be unnatural, and therefore unchallengeable. As things stand now, everything is up for grabs. Nevertheless:_
Napalming babies is bad.
Starving the poor is wicked.
Buy and selling each other is depraved.
Those who stood up and died resisting Hitler, Stalin, Amin, and Pol Pot—and General Custer too—have earned salvation.
Those who acquiesced deserve to be damned.
There is in the world such a thing as evil.
[All together now:] Sez who?
God help us.

When the public finally understands that our secular education policy of godless VOID is an atheistic/agnostic-induced religion and that it was the seed for the Columbine Massacre, the seeds for social decadence, the seeds for the on-going war of kids killing kids in neighborhoods throughout America, a revolution in education policy to include God could be realized. What could the atheistic, agnostic, humanist, secularist, or social engineer fear more than the general public coming to Voltaire’s realization about God based on human nature?

If God did not exist, it would be necessary to invent him. Voltaire.

Simply stated, secularism asserts that public life is to be conducted without reference to religion or to any notion of transcendence. This mood, as innocent and even as attractive as it seems in our modern day, has become the first step on the road to unmanageable evil. 16 Ravi Zacharias

What once was so attractive, life without God, has now become a public aversion to those that are beginning to see. Unfortunately, confusion over events in the Columbine library has dampened this message and thus hindered change toward the positive. Evangelicals are the only ones that could inform the public that values in a vacuum are vain and that atheism can lead to violence in the hearts of a minority.

Evangelicals can still publish the message that our children are killing themselves because we have sanctioned a secular public policy of VOID in their schools. This VOID leaves our children without purpose for their lives with tendencies toward violence and suicide. (See Chapter 5) Atheistic secularism completely erases inhibitions against our debased natural bent toward selfishness and secret temptations to act as if no one is watching. Atheistic secularism espouses the idea that there is no ultimate authority and thus no eternal consequences to pay for. This VOID is no different from the atheistic driving philosophies of Lenin, Stalin, Hitler, Mao, and Pol Pot. The only difference is that these leaders had tools to implement their deadly philosophy on a massive scale.

The fear of the secular elites was that the public would realize for the first time the connection between atheistic secular belief and its deadly results. Such general realization would significantly hamper the social engineers’ efforts to remake our society via their manipulative public policies of godlessness in our schools and courts. The relationship between atheistic hardcore secularism and violence was clearly expressed
during the tantalizing exchanges and cruel terrorizing violence of Columbine’s bloody and heartless massacre.

Dr. William Provine (atheist) admitted in Ben Stein’s *Expelled – No Intelligence Allowed* that with evolution “you give up the notion of an emanate morality.”

In *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork reported that “The late Christopher Lasch, who was by no means a conservative, asked ‘what accounts for [our society’s] wholesale defection from the standards of personal conduct—civility, industry, self-restraint—that were once considered indispensable to democracy?” He answered that a major reason is the ‘gradual decay of religion.’ Our liberal elites, whose ‘attitude to religion,’ Lasch said, ‘ranges from indifference to active hostility,’ have succeeded in removing religion from public recognition and debate.”

Bork explained that, “There is a very considerable additional danger in removing religion from public recognition and debate, as Richard John Neuhaus persuasively argued in The Naked Public Square. There is in many people a need for a belief in the transcendent to give meaning to their lives. By removing religion from the public space, we marginalize it, we deny its importance to society and relegate it to the private sphere. But if men need a transcendance that can be brought to bear on public affairs, and if religion is denied that role, other forms of transcendance, some of them quite ugly and threatening, may move in to occupy the empty space. In part, that has already happened.”

In the 1992 Rodney King riots in Los Angeles, we witnessed scores of average citizens participating in shoplifting simply because local law enforcement personnel were swamped and did not have the manpower to oppose the crimes. Even the Democratic presidential candidate, Bill Clinton, admitted that the King verdict could not be avenged by the "savage behavior" of "lawless vandals," and admitted, “They do not share our values, and their children are growing up in a culture alien from ours, without family, without neighborhood, without church, without support.” And are we too embarrassed to admit … and without God?

Should we be surprised that a public policy of educated godlessness breeds lawlessness?

The historian Paul Johnson warns: “In the last generation, with public Christianity in headlong retreat, we have caught our first, distant view of a de-Christianized world, and it is not encouraging.”

This message could be sufficient to turning the public toward an educational policy of choice in education. Without this, children will be continually indoctrinated with godlessness. The lesson of Columbine is that the separation of church and state doesn’t exist as long as atheistic faith is propagated in our government schools. Columbine also taught that a godless minority will torture the majority.

No God! No rules! No eternal consequences! Pull the trigger again, Eric.
Laugh louder Dylan. It’s commonly believed that no one of any significance is really watching anyway.

Unfortunately, evangelicals are sleeping on their opportunity to inform the public of godlessness secularism. We are very proud of our sacred rebellion against God’s crying heart for us to surrender to His lordship over all life, including public education policy.

Appendix C References:
(1) *Day of Reckoning*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg. 89
(2) Ibid, pg. 94
(3) Ibid, pg. 94
(4) “Inside the Columbine High Investigation,” Dave Cullen (From Salon.com)
   - Everything You Know about the Littleton Killings Is Wrong. But the truth may be scarier than the myths.
(5) *Day of Reckoning*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg. 92
(6) Ibid, pg. 92
(7) Ibid, pg. 95
(11) *Day of Reckoning*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg. 95.
(12) Ibid, pg. 95]
(13) See Salon.com “Inside the Columbine High Investigation: Everything You Know About the Littleton Killings Is Wrong. But the truth may be scarier than the myths,” Dave Cullen.
(14) Ibid.
(15) *Day of Reckoning*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg. 100
(16) *Deliver Us From Evil*, Restoring the Soul in a Disintegrating Culture, Ravi Zacharias, pg. 23-24
(17) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork, pg. 274,
(18) ibid, pg. 274
(20) *A History of Christianity*, Paul Johnson, pg 517
Atheneum – Macmillan Publishing Company
Appendix D: Loss of Christian Liberties

The following issues are coming to your school and community if they haven’t already. It’s only a matter of time. Only ignorance to humanists’ aggressive actions in public policy and public institutions in other communities across our nation would cause an individual to question any of the following. For many cases, humanists know to bring change about by slow piecemeal efforts. Small changes in some communities can be missed by those in other communities. And the pattern seems to be, if the godless elements sense that they possess sufficient political power then censorship to Christian expression will be implemented.

a) Removal of open voluntary prayer in government schools. (One youth pastor that was born after the 1962 Supreme Court decision that removed prayer in schools, thought this an overstatement because students could still meet at the flag pole for prayer one day out of the year before school begins. He has never seen a public school teacher say grace over lunch. They once did.)

b) Removal of voluntary baccalaureate services. (The author witnessed this in the Santa Barbara area.)

c) Censorship of Christian student graduation speeches. School officials can now demand that students submit their speeches in writing for approval and, if they deviate, withhold their diplomas. The U.S. Supreme Court refused to hear the appeal of Jessica Corder, the Lewis-Palmer High School, Monument, Colorado, graduate who had her constitutional rights to free speech hindered. Source: “Jesus Talk Won’t Reach High Court,” The Gazette, December 1, 2009, pg. A11.

d) Censorship of Christian songs in talent programs.

e) Intimidation or elimination of student Bible clubs. (What happened to Equal Access?)

f) Control or elimination of Christian tract distribution by students from elementary to high school while school authorities distribute condoms and invite gay and lesbian death-style promoting activists to speak to students.

g) Intimidation of Gideon Bible distribution on public sidewalks outside government schools.

h) Removal of posted Ten Commandments.

i) Boy Scouts almost lost the right to exclude homosexual counselors by one vote on the Supreme Court. The Boy Scouts receive no federal or state funds. Yet the same godless elements desire to use the excuse of sexual abuse of children by priests to cause financial hardships and collapse for any church that harbored these priests. Are these same judges willing to be financially liable for the sexual abuse that will result when they finally mandate the Boy Scouts accept homosexuals? These same voices control the public schools. How eager are these godless voices to bring financial penalties on the administrators and institutions that hide the present sexual abuses by public school teachers now?
j) Equal Employment Opportunity Commission (EEOC) almost classified witnessing as being comparable to sexual harassment. This would apply to all businesses, even those businesses that receive no government money. I have received training at one company that gave employees the notion that if anyone tries to talk religion, then such actions are automatically classified as harassment. I was immediately reported to Human Resources after this lecture because I witnessed to a friend without any hint of a complaint from him. As the culture becomes more secular, the above two trends will become law someday, unless Christians wake up and prepare for this fight now.

k) If House Resolution HR1 had passed, it would have put the rights of all home-schoolers in jeopardy.

The NEA resolutions, that are adopted yearly, confirm their agenda. Go to http://www.nea.org. Select “Resolutions,” then do a search on “home schooling.” The NEA’s agenda is to destroy home schools and all religious schools despite their academic successes. The NEA resolution reads: Instruction should be by persons who are licensed by the appropriate state education licensure agency, and a curriculum approved by the state department of education should be used. There is no question that the very humanistic NEA looks forward to the day when they can shut down all schools that do not comply with their godless secular agenda. This has nothing to do with academics. This is a religious cultural war.

In California, the NEA has been on the attack for years and on February 28, 2008, the 2nd District Court of Appeals ruled that California parents without state teaching credentials do not have a right to home school their children. The Colorado Springs Gazette editors warn: The California ruling is an attack on children, an attack on families and a threat to liberty itself. And watch out, because the attack is going to spread.(36) The home-schoolers in California should have supported the School Choice Initiative--Proposition 174 in 1993. Proposition 174 (school choice) would have put protections in the California constitution that would have greatly reduced the NEA’s ability to control home-schools by requiring the legislature to be 75 percent in agreement instead of the simply majority. Proposition 174 changes would have also required the majority of registered voters to approve legislative changes as well.

l) There is censorship of scientific evidence for intelligent design and censorship of problems in evolutionary theory. There is no academic freedom for teachers to communicate this science in our schools. Even college instructors have lost their jobs over this. See Expelled–No Intelligence Allowed DVD.

m) In 2001, the Supreme Court considered whether cities can limit door-to-door soliciting by religious or political activists. (Colorado Springs The Gazette, 10/16/2001 “Door-to-door soliciting goes to Supreme Court,” pg A9) Why is the Supreme Court even considering so basic a freedom? This is just as
Francis Schaeffer predicted, as the Christian consensus is forgotten, even this freedom will be lost.

n) In April 2003 the senior editor of Touchstone wrote an article titled: “Political Orphans, How the Democratic Party Left Traditional Believers Behind.” On page 33 he stated: *There is at present a vigorous but largely unnoticed debate in intellectual circles over whether liberalism should be regarded as ‘procedural’ or ‘comprehensive,’ that is, whether it means merely that everyone agrees to work within democratic institutions, conceding to everyone the basic liberties guaranteed by the Bill of Rights, or whether enjoying full citizenship requires accepting prevailing liberal views about abortion, sexual behavior, and other things. Lurking just out of sight of the mass media, but enjoying influence in some quarters of the Democratic Party, are ideologues who argue forthrightly that orthodox religious believers and other ‘reactionary’ people cannot be allowed full freedom to propagate their beliefs, not even within their own families. Some liberals have now pulled away from the idea that ‘democracy’ requires complete toleration of all viewpoints and argue precisely that the freedom of some people must be curtailed in the name of freedom.*

o) Now we are facing the Fairness Doctrine which has the real potential of silencing Christian and conservative radio stations. (See American Center for Law and Justice. www.aclj.org/doctrine)

p) Recent court decisions have placed the burden upon parents to show why a particular school action, book, or policy is unreasonable or violates their religious convictions. Source: *Smith v. Ricci*, 89 N.J. 514, 446 A.2d 501 (1982); *Buiform v. Southeast Dubois County School Corp.*, 472 F.2d 890 (7th Cir. 1973) quoted in Rights Wronged, the Erosion and Restoration of Parental Rights in Public Education, Perry L. Glanzer, M.A. pg. 9.

q) The Texas Board of Education and the Texas Education Agency argued that a parent’s right to direct the upbringing and education of his or her children is not a fundamental right. Source: Appellants’ Brief at 11, *Texas Education Agency v. Maxwell* (5th Cir.) (No. 14-95-00474-CV), quoted in Rights Wronged, The Erosion and Restoration of Parental Rights in Public Education, Perry L. Glanzer, M.A. pg. 12.

r) In *Mozert v. Hawkins County Public Schools*, a number of parents claimed that the school’s readers offended their religious beliefs. The case went to the district court, which upheld the parents’ claims. However, a federal court of appeals reversed the decision, arguing that mere exposure to beliefs and practices with which one or one’s child does not agree is not a burden on one’s religious freedom. 827 F.2d 1058 (6th Cir. 1987), cert. denied, 484 U.S. 1066 (1988) quoted in Rights Wronged, the Erosion and Restoration of Parental Rights in Public Education, Perry L. Glanzer, M.A. pg. 12.

s) “California Education Officials told the Institute for Creation Research in San Diego that it can no longer grant Master’s degrees in science. The Religious News Service report said that the institute received unanimous approval to grant science degrees from a six-member state review

t) “After the judicial imposition of ‘same-sex marriage’ in Massachusetts, Catholic Charities chose with great reluctance to end its century-long work of helping to place orphaned children in good homes rather than comply with a legal mandate that it place children in same-sex households in violation of Catholic moral teaching.” Source: *Manhattan Declaration*, November 20, 2009.

u) Pastor Everett Sileven was arrested, put in jail, and his church padlocked because he was operating a school without the approval of the Nebraska Department of Education. Source: *The Day They Padlocked The Church*, by H. Edward Rowe, Published by: Huntington House, Inc. 1200 N. Market Street, Suite G, Shreveport, Louisiana 71101 (318) 222-1350

Equally unconstitutional and obnoxious is the requirement that church-school teachers be evaluated by state authorities. While the NEA is fighting tooth and nail against teacher-competency testing in Arkansas, does it now approve of such testing to ‘evaluate’ teachers in [Nebraska] church schools? If the teachers fail, the parent may go to jail! That’s the state of religious freedom in Soviet Nebraska. Source: Trojan Horse in American Education, Samuel L. Blumenfeld. Pg. 254

v) “In his book *Free Speech for Me but Not for Thee*, Nat Hentoff tells the story of a Pennsylvania high school that pressured two Christian students to read a Studs Terkel book containing chapters on prostitutes and a good deal of blasphemous language. Backed by their parents, the students wanted to opt out from reading it. The school, vengeful to the end, wanted to withhold the students’ diplomas and settled for failing them for the course. The school board said, “With all deference due the parents, their sensibilities are not the full measure of what is proper education.” Source: *Why are We The Enemy?* By Erwin W. Lutzer. Reverend Lutzer asked a very good question: “So who is imposing their values on whom?” (pg. 16)

w) In an editorial titled: “Save the Children – Bill seeks to sink churches” (2/24/2008, pg. A30) the editors of *The Gazette* in Colorado Springs, Colorado brought attention to Representative Gwyn Green’s (D-Golden) House Bill 1011 that would put no time limitation to hold private organizations (read: the Catholic Church) accountable for the actions of the accused. This would force awards to be “paid by people who had never heard of the defendants, and in some cases weren’t born yet when the abuse supposedly occurred... The Colorado bill is a near clone of a California law that facilitated lawyers in dredging up 1,034 old claims, all but 24 involving the Catholic Church. The claims have resulted in more than $1 billion in settlements, bankrupting one diocese. Ten claims involved dead priests who are accused of abusing children in the 1930s.” When critics of Green’s “soak-the-church” bill asked, “If she’s so concerned about saving the children, why isn’t she concerned about those facing sexual abuses in public
schools? In response she proposed a bill that would waive the sovereign immunity that protects public schools. Yet for public schools, the statute of limitations stills apply. Her bill’s intention removes this from churches.

So we think we have freedom of worship if we can sing and listen to sermons in our sealed houses of worship. If this is the extent of our worship and religious freedom, then we are badly deceived. Such worship means nothing when the children are in atheistic bondage. According to apostle Paul’s Romans 12:1-2 passage, the only valid worship is practical engaging action that is in full compliance with God’s desire. As long as Christians are second-class citizens to the humanists in the expression of ideas and influencing children, we are no longer a free people. As long as we are more concerned with losing our tax-exemption status or offending an immature or carnal believer than speaking God’s heart against our corrupt politics and policies, we are no longer a free people with godly convictions.

The American people need to listen again to Nazi resistor and Pastor Martin Neimoller: They came first for the Communists, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a Communist.

Then they came for the trade unionists, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a trade unionist.

Then they came for the Jews, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a Jew.

Then they came for me and by that time no one was left to speak up.

If the American people permit the NEA to silence Christians, then they too will be silenced when they resist NEA’s liberal policies.

*The pulpits of this nation are regrettably silent today on the subject of liberty.*

D. James Kennedy
References:

Chapter 1: Introduction to VOID
(2) Education and the Founding Fathers by David Barton, (pg 7) Note: This is a booklet based on the video and audio by the same title. Wallbuilders, Inc., PO Box 397, Aledo, Texas 76008-0397  (817) 441-6044
(3) Alliance Defense Fund April 2010 letter by Alan E. Sears, pg. 1
(5) The Harsh Truth About Public Schools, Bruce N. Shortt, pg. 354-355
(6) Book Burning. Cal Thomas, pg. 15
(7) The Stealing of America, John W. Whitehead, pg 123.
(8) Confronting Casual Christianity, Charles F. Stanley, pg. 45.
(10) The Church Awakening – An Urgent Call For Renewal, Charles R. Swindoll, pg. xvii. (Faith Words)
(11) Cheating Our Kids – How Politics and Greed Ruin Education, Joe Williams, pg. 162
(12) Bury the Chains – Prophets and Rebels in the Fight to Free an Empire’s Slaves, Adam Hochschild, pg. 7
(14) Audiocassette: A Christian Manifesto - Francis Schaeffer,
    Truth that Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida 33302, 1-800-229-WORD
(15) Why Johnny Can’t Tell Right From Wrong and What We Can Do About it, William Kilpatrick, pg. 15.
(17) The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil, James Davison Hunter, pg. 226
(18) The Discoverers, Daniel J. Boorstin, pg. xv.
(20) ibid, pg. 138
(21) ibid, pg. 139
(22) ibid, pg. 141
(23) ibid, pg. 17
(24) ibid, pg. 16
(25) ibid, pg. 13
(26) ibid, pg. 60
(27) The Holiness of God – Revised and Expanded, RC Sproul, pg. 129
    Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Wheaton, Illinois
(28) No Easy Answers – The Truth Behind Death at Columbine,
    Brooks Brown and Rob Merritt,
    page 4
(29) ibid, page 151
(30) ibid, page 151
(31) ibid, page 151
(32) ibid, page 151
(33) ibid, page 148
(34) *Day of Reckoning, Columbine and the Search for America’s Soul*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg. 133.
(35) ibid, pg. 133
(36) http://www.acolumnbiesite.com/victim/rachel.html
(38) *Reason in the Balance*, The Case Against NATURALISM in Science, Law & Education, Phillip E. Johnson, pg. 49
(39) *Rachel’s Tears, The Spiritual Journey of Columbine Martyr Rachel Scott*, Beth Nimmo and Darrell Scott, pg. 100.
(40) *Awakening Cry – Once again God is commissioning revivalists, reformers and rebels for the ultimate cause*, Pete Greig, pg. 24, Silver Fish Publishing, in association with Novio Publishing.
(41) ibid, pg. 49
(42) *A Christian Manifesto*, Francis Schaeffer – Audiocassette Tape (GEK) Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida 33302
(43) *Awakening Cry – Once again God is commissioning revivalists, reformers and rebels for the ultimate cause*, Pete Greig, pg. 51-52

Chapter 2: The Class of the Secret Agenda
(2) *Biology Principles & Explorations*, by Holt, Rinehart and Winston, pg. 228
(3) *Biology – The Unity and Diversity of Life*, 3rd Edition, Cecie Starr & Ralph Taggart, pg.502
(4) *Science Insights*, Addison Wesley, 1996, Green, Figure 8.7, pg. 165)
(7) *Biology*, Holt, 1994, pg. 14
(9) *Child Abuse in the Classroom*, Edited by Phyllis Schlafly, pg. 126
(11) *Signs of Intelligence – Understanding Intelligent Design*, William A. Dembski & James M. Kushiner, pg. 15-16
(12) DVD: *Expelled-No Intelligence Allow* with Ben Stein
-produced by PREMISE Media Corporation
(13) *Rachel’s Tears*, The Spiritual Journey of Columbine Martyr Rachel Scott, pg. 28
(14) ibid, pg. 111
(15) *Child Abuse in the Classroom*, Edited by Phyllis Schlafly, Pg. 124
(16) The Barna Update: Most Twentysomethings Put Christianity on the Shelf Following Spiritual Active Teen Year, September 11, 2006
(19) Can we be good without God, Chuck Colson.
   Source: www.christlife.org/faithrenewal/Canbegood.html
(20) Articles of Faith, Articles of Peace: The Religious Liberty Clauses and the American Public Philosophy, James Davison Hunter and Os Guiness, eds.
   Chapter 4: Religious Freedom and the Challenge of Modern Pluralism, pg. 56
(21) Implications of Evolution, G. A. Kerkut, pg. vii
(22) Evolution: A Theory in Crisis, Michael Denton, page 86
(23) Darwin's Black Box, Michael Behe, pg 28
(24) ibid, pg. 5
(26) Evolution: A Theory in Crisis, Michael Denton, pg 165
(27) The Creation-Evolution Controversy, R.L. Wysong. Pg.301-304
(28) Icons of Evolution, Jonathan Wells, pg.xi
(30) Biology, Holt, 1994, page 14
(31) “Saving Darwinism form the Darwinians,” Michael Ruse, National Post, May 13, 2000, B3
(32) Darwin's Black Box, Michael Behe, pg 26)
(33) ibid, page 26
(35) Darwin’s Black Box, Michael Behe, page. 26
(36) Evolution: A theory in Crisis, Michael Denton, pg 66
(37) Evolution: A Theory in Crisis, Dr. Michael Denton, pg. 23.
(38) Article: “Prominent British scientists abandon evolution,” pg. 1
   This is a past periodical from Students for Origins Research. They are now called, Access Research Network. See www.arn.org.
(39) Evolution: A Theory in Crisis, Dr. Michael Denton, pg. 56.
(40) Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Delcine, Robert Bork, pg. 294.
(41) Why Good Arguments Often Fail, James W. Sire, pg. 97
(43) Jesus Among Other Gods, Ravi Zacharias, pg. 57
(44) The Remarkable Record of Job – The Ancient Wisdom, Scientific Accuracy, and
Chapter 3: Political Pressures, Prophets, and Public Spirituality

(1) *Slaughter of the Dissidents*, Vol 1, Dr. Jerry Bergman pg 132 and is a quote from Alan Sears and Craig Osteen 2005 work: *The ACLU vs America: Exposing the Agenda to Redefine Moral Values*. pg. 4.


(3) Ibid, pg. 3

(4) *Slaughter of the Dissidents*, Vol 1, Dr. Jerry Bergman, page 133.

(5) Ibid, 1 pg. 135

(6) Ibid, pg. 142

(7) Ibid, pg 145

(8) Ibid, pg. 151


(10) *The Harsh Truth About Public Schools*, Bruce N. Shortt, pg. 301


(11) *The Rebirth of America*, Published by: The Arthur S. DeMoss Foundation, pg 123

(12) *History of the Norwegian People in America*, O. M. Norlie, pg. 377 (Minneapolis, Minn.: Augsburg Pub.) quoted in *Public Schools – An Evangelical Appraisal*, Frank C. Nelsen, Ph.D., pg. 63


(15) *The Manhattan Declaration*,

Released on November 20, 2009; http://manhattandeclaration.org/


Pg. Preface to the 1994 printing.

(18) ibid, pg. 226.
(19) “Humanist Manifesto II.” See Religion, First Tenant. Google Humanist Manifesto II or go to: http://www.americanhumanist.org/Who_We_Are/About_Humanism/Humanist_Manifesto_II
(20) The Devil’s Delusion, Dr. David Berlinski, Pg 95
(22) The Stealing of America, John Whitehead, pg. 93
(23) Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline, Robert H. Bork, pg 7
(25) Education and The Founding Fathers, David Barton, pg. 22.
(26) America’s God and Country, William J. Federer, pg. 326
(27) “The Bible and the citizen,” by Dr. Wayne Grudem, in Focus on the Family Citizen, November 2010, Vol. 24, No. 9, pg. 10, 8605 Explorer Dr., Colorado Springs, CO 80995, email: citizeneditor@family.org, Web: www.CitizenMagazine.com
(28) Talk Thru the Bible, Bruce Wilkinson and Kenneth Boa, pg. 185
(29) What the Bible is all about, Henrietta C. Mears, pg. 285
(33) The Death of Character – Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil, James Davison Hunter, pg. 5
(36) Whoever Controls the Schools Rules the World, Gary DeMar pg 63
(37) ibid, pg 60
(39) www.equip.org/free/DN118.htm pg. 2, 3
(40) A Christian Manifesto, Dr. Francis Schaeffer, (Audio Cassette) Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida, 33302 www.coralridge.org 1-800-229-9673.
(41) America’s God and Country, William J. Federer, pg.323
(42) ibid.
(43) A Christian Manifesto, Dr. Francis Schaeffer, (Audio Cassette) Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida, 33302 www.coralridge.org 1-800-229-9673.
(44) ibid.
(45) “School Violence: A Columbine Parent Testifies” by Darrell Scott
Chapter 4: Profound Secondary Effects of Humanistic Education and the Cry of God’s Heart
(1) *No Easy Answers, The Truth Behind Death at Columbine*, Brooks Brown & Rob Merritt, pg. 31
(2) ibid, pg. 13
(3) ibid, pg. 50
(4) *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities*, by Clifford W. Cobb, Published by ICS Press, San Francisco, California, pg. 35.
(6) *Kids Who Kill* by Mike Huckabee & Dr. George Grant, Broadman & Holman Publishers, pg. 11.
(7) Article: "Martyr for her faith", Denver Rocky Mountain News, 4/23/1999, pg. 5A
(9) *NEA Oregon UniServ Bulletin*, October 1981
(10) *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities*, Clifford Cobb, Pg. 167
(11) ibid., pg. 60
(13) *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities*, Clifford Cobb, pg.154.

Chapter 5: Values in Vacuum in Vain
(1) *Los Angeles Times*, 12/21/99 pg A13 Commentary - "Columbine Offers Lessons On What Ails Modern America"
(2) *Denver Rocky Mountain News*, April 19, 2000, page 5A
(3) *The Gazette*, Colorado Springs, 1/25/02, Metro3)
(4) *The Complete Works of Francis A Schaeffer, Vol 5* pg 440 references *The Lessons of History* by Will and Ariel Durant
(5) Ibid.
(6) Ibid. page 439
(7) Ibid. page 439
(10) Ibid. page 133
(13) *Day of Reckoning*, Wendy Murray Zoba, pg 131.
(15) Essay: "Can We Be Good without God?", by Chuck Colson, source: http://www.christlife.org/faithrenewal/Canbegood.html
(16) ibid.
(18) *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil*, James Davison Hunter, pages 158-168.
(Basic Books, A Member of the Perseus Books Group)
(20) *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil*, James Davison Hunter, page 163.
(21) Ibid. pg 163
(22) Ibid. pg 163
(23) Ibid. pg. 169
(24) Ibid. pg. 169
(25) *The De-valuing of America*, William J. Bennett, page 35
(26) *Deliver Us from Evil*, Ravi, Zacharias, pg 23
(28) *America's Godly Heritage*, pg 17
(29) ibid., pg18
(30) *Educating For character*, by Thomas Lickona, pg 40
(31) *America's Godly Heritage* booklet by David Barton, pg 20
(32) ibid., pg 21
(33) ibid., pg 23
(34) ibid., pg 21
(35) *America’s God And Country, Encyclopedia Of Quotations*,
    William J. Federer, Fame Publishing, Inc. Coppell, Texas, pg. 483
(36) Ibid., pg. 661.
(38) *The Bible in Schools*, (Tract No. 50266) American Tract Society, Box 4672998, Garland, TX 57046
(39) *Education of the Founding Fathers*, David Barton (GS9) 2022095, Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Fl 33302, Historian David Barton

267
(41) Audio Cassette: “Education of the Founding Fathers,” David Barton (GS9) 2022095, Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Fl 33302.
(42) *Conservative Chronicle*, “Religion and the state - East & West,” Don Feder, 5/12/93
(43) *Conservative Chronicle*, “A dose of religion is a practical cure for crime,” William F. Buckley, Jr. 9/29/93
(44) *No Easy Answers, The Truth Behind Death at Columbine*, Brooks Brown & Rob Merritt, pg 251-252)
(45) *Deliver Us From Evil*, Ravi Zacharias, pg157-158)
(48) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah* – Modern Liberalism and American Decline, Robert H. Bork, pg. 294
(49) "Honig Guilty of Felony Conflict of Interest," *Santa Maria Times*, 1/31/93, pg A5, Santa Maria, CA and "Honig convicted on four counts," *Lompoc Record*, 1/31/93, Lompoc, CA
(53) The Gazette, "How Can We Teach ethics In A Secular Setting?" 6/11/2003, Metro7
(55) *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an age Without Good or Evil, James Davison Hunter*, pg xv
(56) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah*, Robert H. Bork pg 275-276
(57) *The Death of Character, Moral Education in an Age Without Good or Evil, James Davison Hunter*, pg. xv
(59) *The Rebirth of America*, Executive Editor: Nancy Leigh DeMoss, pg. 127

Chapter 6: Evangelical Mistakes

(5) *Whoever Controls the Schools Rules the World*, Gary DeMar, pg. 61
Chapter 7: MISLEADING SOUND BITE THEOLOGIES

(1) Whatever Controls the Schools Rules the World, Gary DeMar, pg 4.
   quoted The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich, Shirer 240.
(2) Is God to Blame?, Gregory Boyd pg. 75
(3) Article: “The Father of Modern Mission, A Weekly Word from Jeff Fountain,”
   April 11, 2007.  Website: www.24-7prayer.com/article/799
Go to this website and search for “Jeff Fountain” or anything in the title above to retrieve this article.

Chapter 8: Easy Evangelicalism and Their Coming Judgment
(1) *Returning to Holiness, A Personal and Churchwide Journey to Revival*, Dr. Gregory R Frizzell, pg 88-89.
(4) *How Saved Are We?*, Dr. Michael Brown, pg. 2
(5) *Seven Faith Tribes*, George Barna.
(6) *Conservative Religion and the Quandary of Modernity*, James Davison Hunter, pg. 126
(7) *The Rebirth Of America*, Editor: Nancy Leigh DeMoss, page 69. Publisher: The Arthur S. DeMoss Foundation.  See also *America's God and Country*, by William J. Federer, page 333. Note: "Book of Life" is mentioned instead of "book of fate." The "book of fate" quote is from an inscription on the Thomas Jefferson Memorial. The website editors have left this part off their website. Part of the quote may still be secured by using www.yahoo.com and searching with Thomas Jefferson Memorial. Click on "Thomas Jefferson Memorial" that has the site map of: http://www.nps.gov/thje/home.htm. Click on "memorial" then "inscription".
(8) *While God is Marching On, The Religious World of Civil War Soldiers*, Steven E. Woodworth, pg. 18
(9) ibid., pg 19.
(11) Today’s Pentecostal Evangel, October 26, 2008, Defending Christianity in a secular culture, pg 16
(12) *While God is Marching On, The Religious World of Civil War Soldiers*, Steven E. Woodworth, pg. 15
(13) ibid., pg 20
(15) *While God is Marching On, The Religious World of Civil War Soldiers*, Steven E. Woodworth, pg. 17
(16) *Why You Can’t Stay Silent, A Biblical Mandate to Shape Our Culture*, Tom Minnery, pg 160-161
(17) ibid., pg 167
(18) *When God Doesn’t Make Sense*, Dr. James Dobson, pg 182-183
(19) *While God is Marching On – The Religious World of Civil War Soldiers*, Steven E. Woodworth, pg 15
(20) *Assembly of God Perspectives – Contemporary Issues*, pg. 25.
(21) Audiocassette Tape: *A Christian Manifesto*, Francis Schaeffer (GEK) Truths That Transform, P.O. Box 33, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida 33302.
(22) *Awakening Cry*, Once again God is commissioning revivalists, reformers and rebels
for the ultimate cause, Pete Creig. Pg. 168

(23) *Whoever Controls the Schools Rules the World*, Gary DeMar, pg 61.

(24) Article: “Why Christians Must Be Involved,” by Tom Minnery

(25) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*,


(27) *The Complete Crisis Everyone Ignores*, by Tom Minnery

– A Christian View of The Church, pg 321

(28) *God’s Angry Side*, Stephen A. Bly, pg. 42

(29) *Basic Christianity*, John R.W. Stott, pg. 9


    Edited by Denise M. Bonilla, pg. 24.

(31) *Responsive Schools, Renewed Communities*, Clifford W. Cobb, pg. 19

(32) “The National Extortion Association?” by Peter Brimelow and Leslie Spencer,


(33) *Reason in the Balance*, Phillip Johnson, pg. 49

(34) *The Cost of Discipleship*, Dietrich Bonhoeffer, pg 61

---

Chapter 9: Our Future Society

(1) *NEA – Trojan Horse in American Education*, Samuel L. Blumenfeld, pg. 161

(2) Ibid, pg 166

(3) Ibid, pg 170

(4) Ibid, pg 171

(5) Ibid, pg 176

(6) Ibid, pg 177

(7) Ibid, pg 177

(8) *The NEA and AFT – Teacher Unions in Power and Politics*, Charlene Haar,

    Myron Lieberman, Leo Troy, pg. 58

(9) Ibid, pg 77

(10) Ibid, pg 77

(11) Ibid, pg 78

(12) “The National Extortion Association?,” by Peter Brimelow and Leslie Spencer,


(13) Ibid.


(15) *The NEA and AFT – Teacher Unions in Power and Politics*, Charlene Haar,

    Myron Lieberman, Leo Troy pg 57

(16) Ibid, pg 77

(17) “California’s mighty 800-pound Gorillas,” by Peter Schrag, printed in *Santa Barbara News Press* (7/23/93);

(18) “The National Extortion Association?,” by Peter Brimelow and Leslie Spencer,


(19) “The Crisis in Education is Our Problem,” by Michael R. Losey,

    *Modern Office Technology*, February 1993, pg. 46
(20) Ibid. pg. 47
(22) “California Watch: Will California Default on Bond Debt in 2010?” By Chris Sieroly, December 28, 2009, Market News International Los Angeles
(23) ibid.
(24) ibid.
(25) "The Fiscal Impact of the NEA’s Legislative Agenda," John E. Berthoud, The Alexis de Tocqueville Institute, March 1996 quoted in Grading the NEA – What every teacher needs to know about the National Education Association, Perry L. Glanzer, Ph.D. & Travis R. Pardo, pg. 10
(28) The NEA and AFT – Teacher Unions in Power and Politics, Charlene Haar, Myron Lieberman, Leo Troy, Pg 61
(29) NÉA – Trojan Horse in American Education, Samuel L. Blumenfeld, pg x
(30) Grading the NEA, Perry L. Glanzer, Ph. D & Travis R. Pardo, pg. 9
(32) Ibid, pg. 12
(33) Ibid, pg. 12
(35) Ibid.
(36) The NEA and AFT – Teacher Unions in Power and Politics, Charlene Haar, Myron Lieberman, Leo Troy, pg 62
(37) Ibid. pg 62
(38) The Complete Works of Francis A Schaeffer, volume 4, pg. 361
(41) Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline, Robert H. Bork, pg. 319
(42) America’s God and Country, William J. Federer, Pg. 323.
(44) America’s God and Country, William J. Federer, pg.323
Chapter 10: Options and Strategies

(1) *Out of Order – Arrogance, Corruption, and Incompetence on the Bench*, Max Boot, pg ix
(2) ibid. pg. ix
(3) ibid. pg. x
(4) ibid. pg. 215
(5) ibid. pg. 217
(6) ibid. pg. 200
(7) ibid. pg. 217
(8) ibid. pg. 217
(9) *The Culture of Disbelief – How American Law and Politics Trivialize Religious Devotion*, pg xviii
(10) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork, pg 4
(11) *Persecution – How Liberals are waging war against Christians*, David Limbaugh
(12) ibid. pg. 5
(13) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork, pg. 96
(14) ibid., pg. 97
(16) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert H. Bork, pg. 119
(17) ibid., pg. 319
(18) “Exodus From Public Schools Could Change Our Culture,” Cal Thomas
Note: Write to Cal Thomas c/o Tribune Media Services, 435 N. Michigan Ave.,
Suite 1500, Chicago, Ill, 60611 or by email: www.calthomas.com
(19) *Persecution – How Liberals are Waging War against Christianity*, David Limbaugh,
pg. 66, Primary Source: “Banning Prayer from the Public Square is a Postmodern Notion,” Charles W. Moore, 1999
(20) A statement by Dr. David Noebel at the Worldview Weekend seminar on
10/27/2001 in Colorado Springs, Colorado. (See Summit Ministries, P.O. Box 207,
Manitou Springs, Colorado 80829, (866) 786-6483 or (719) 685-9103
Website: www.Summit.org.
(21) *Slouching Towards Gomorrah – Modern Liberalism and American Decline*,
Robert H. Bork, pg 4